

GOVERNMENT OF INDIA
ARCHÆOLOGICAL SURVEY OF INDIA

ARCHÆOLOGICAL
LIBRARY

ACCESSION NO. 27250

CALL No. 509.34/5ca

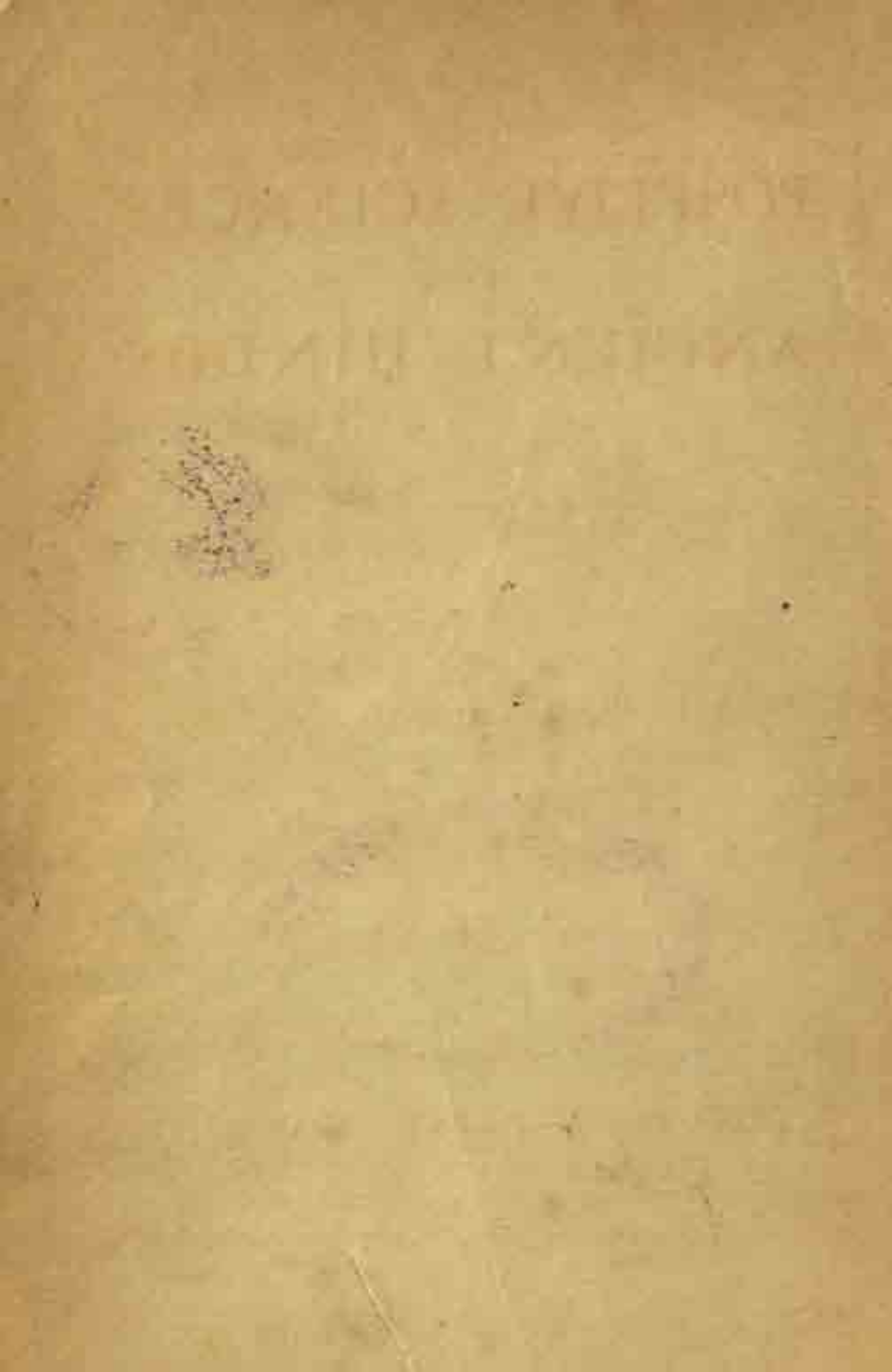
~~55026d~~

D.G.A. 79

De^r

2
Cam. cont.

30.8.16



THE
POSITIVE SCIENCES
OF THE
ANCIENT HINDUS

27250



BY

BRAJENDRANATH SEAL, M.A., Ph.D.



3026(4)

509.34

LONGMANS, GREEN AND CO.

39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON

FOURTH AVENUE & 30TH STREET, NEW YORK

BOMBAY, CALCUTTA, AND MADRAS

1915

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL
LIBRARY, NEW DELHI.

Acc. No. 27.2.50

Date. 1.8.57

Call No. 509.34.54 509.34/Sea

Sea

LENDING:

PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED,
BULL MARK, STAMFORD STREET, E.C., AND HERAT WINDMILL STREET, W.

FOREWORD

THE following pages comprise a series of monographs on the Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus. In the present state of Indian chronology it is not possible to assign dates to the original sources from which the materials have been drawn. Practically the main body of positive knowledge here presented may be assigned to the millennium 500 B.C.—500 A.D. Colebrooke's account of Hindu Algebra, and Hærnle's of Hindu Osteology, have made it unnecessary for me to write separate monographs on these subjects. The former, however, requires to be brought up to date. The progress of Indian Algebra (mainly in Southern India) after Bháskara, parallel to the developments in China and Japan, is a subject that remains for future investigation.

The chapter on the "Mechanical, Physical, and Chemical Theories of the Ancient Hindus" appeared in Dr. P. C. Ray's *Hindu Chemistry* (Vol. II.), and that on the "Scientific Method of the Hindus" as an appendix to the same work.

My direct aim in the present work is to furnish the historians of the special sciences with new material which will serve to widen the scope of their survey. The Hindus no less than the Greeks have shared in the work of constructing scientific concepts and methods in the investigation of physical phenomena, as well as of building up a body of positive knowledge which has been applied to industrial technique; and Hindu

scientific ideas and methodology (*e.g.* the inductive method or methods of algebraic analysis) have deeply influenced the course of natural philosophy in Asia—in the East as well as the West—in China and Japan, as well as in the Saracen Empire. A comparative estimate of Greek and Hindu science may now be undertaken with some measure of success—and finality.

These studies in Hindu Positive Science are also intended to serve as a preliminary to my "Studies in Comparative Philosophy." Philosophy in its rise and development is necessarily governed by the body of positive knowledge preceding or accompanying it. Hindu Philosophy *on its empirical side* was dominated by concepts derived from physiology and philology, just as Greek Philosophy was similarly dominated by geometrical concepts and methods. Comparative Philosophy, then, in its criticism and estimate of Hindu thought, must take note of the empirical basis on which the speculative superstructure was raised.

I have not written one line which is not supported by the clearest texts. The ground trodden is, for the most part, absolutely new. Fortunately, the Sanskrit philosophico-scientific terminology, however difficult from its technical character, is exceedingly precise, consistent, and expressive. I may add that I have occasionally used (perhaps with a questionable freedom) scientific terms like isomeric, polymeric, potential, etc., in a broad sense, as convenient symbols to express ideas nearly or remotely allied.

BRAJENDRANATH SEAL.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I.

THE MECHANICAL, PHYSICAL, AND CHEMICAL THEORIES OF THE ANCIENT HINDUS.

THE SĀṆKHYA-PĀTAÑJALA SYSTEM.

PAGES

Prakṛiti, the Ultimate Ground—The Original Constituents and their Interaction—The Starting-point—Beginning of Evolution—Formation of Wholes or Systems—Collocation of Reals—The Formula of Evolution—The Conservation of Energy (and of Mass)—The Transformation of Energy—The Doctrine of Causation, a Corollary from the Conservation and Transformation of Energy—The Principle of Collocation—The Storing-up and the Liberation of Energy—Chain of Causation—Fixed Order—Time, Space, and the Causal Series—Space as Extension and Space as Position—The Causal Series—The Dissipation of Energy (and of Mass)—Their Dissolution into the Formless Prakṛiti—The Evolution of Matter—The Genesis of the Infra-atomic Unit-potentials and of the Atoms—Cosmo-genesis, a Bird's-eye View—Chemical Analysis and Synthesis—Elements and Compounds .	1-56
--	------

CHEMISTRY IN THE MEDICAL SCHOOLS OF ANCIENT INDIA.

Physical Characters of the Bhūtas—The Mahā-Bhūtas—Mechanical Mixtures—Qualities of Compounds—The extant Charaka and Susruta—Succession of Medical Authorities—Preparation of Chemical Compounds—Chemical Compositions and Decompositions—Organic Compounds—Poisons—Formation of Molecular Qualities in Chemical Compounds—Chemistry of Colours—Parināma-vāda versus Ārambha-vāda—Measures of Time and Space—Bhāskarācāryya, a Precursor of Newton in the Conception of the Differential Calculus and its Application to Astronomy—Measures of Weight and Capacity—Size of the Minimum Visible (Size of an Atom) . . .	56-85
---	-------

VEDĀNTIC VIEW.		PAGES
Māyā—Evolution of different Forms of Matter—Pañchi-karana		85-92
THE ATOMIC THEORY OF THE BUDDHISTS		92-93
THE ATOMIC THEORY OF THE JAINS.		
General Properties of Matter—Atomic Linking		93-98
THE NYĀYA-VAIŚEṢHIKA CHEMICAL THEORY.		
Theory of Atomic Combination—Chemical Combination—Mono-Bhautic Compounds—Hetero-Bhautic Compounds—The Theory of Dynamic Contact (Viśvambha)—Oils, Fats, Milks—Mixtures like Soups, Solutions, etc.—Chemical Action and Heat—Light-Rays—Theory of Reflection, Refraction, etc.—Arrangement of Atoms in Space—The Foundations of Solid (Co-ordinate) Geometry—Three Axes of Vācaspati—Graphic Representation of the Constitution of a Bi-Bhautic Compound (with "complex contact")		98-121
CONCEPTION OF MOLECULAR MOTION (PARISPANDA)		121-123
ADDENDA: EMPIRICAL RECIPES OF CHEMICAL TECHNOLOGY.		
Searing of Rocks—Hardening of Steel—Preparation of Cements—Nourishment of Plants		124-128

CHAPTER II.

HINDU IDEAS ON MECHANICS (KINETICS).

Analysis of Motion—Motion considered in Relation to its Causes—Cause of Motion, or Force—The Concept of Vega—Causes of Pressure and of Impact—Illustrations of Combination of Forces—Composition of Gravity with Vega—Motion of a Particle in the Case of a Composition of Forces—Typical Cases of Curvilinear Motion—Vibratory Motion—Rotatory Motion—Motion of Fluids—Interesting Examples of Motion ascribed to Adrishtā—Measurement of Motion—
--

PAGES

Units of Space and Time—Component of Velocity— Notion of Three Axes—Relative Motion—Serial Motion	129-152
---	---------

CHAPTER III.

HINDU IDEAS ON ACOUSTICS.

Analysis of Sound—Analysis of Vibratory Motion, <i>e.g.</i> of a bell (in air)—Echo—Pitch, Intensity, and Timbre— Musical Sounds—The Notes of the Diatonic Scale : Determination of their Relative Pitch—Musical Intervals	153-168
--	---------

CHAPTER IV.

HINDU IDEAS ABOUT PLANTS AND PLANT-LIFE.

Classification of Plants—Elementary Ideas of Plant Phy- siology—Characteristics of Plant-Life—Sexuality— Consciousness	169-176
--	---------

CHAPTER V.

HINDU CLASSIFICATION OF ANIMALS.

Classification of Animals—The Dietary Animals in Charaka and Susruta—Snakes in Nāgārjuna—Snakes in the Purāṇas—Umāsvāti's Classification of Animals —Recapitulation	177-201
--	---------

CHAPTER VI.

HINDU PHYSIOLOGY AND BIOLOGY.

Metabolism—The Chemistry of Digestion—The Vascular System—The Nervous System in Charaka—The Nervous System after the Tantras—Psycho-physiology —Ganglionic Centres and Plexuses (Sympathetic- Spinal System)—Nerve Cords and Fibres—Automatic and Reflex Activity of the Organism—Fœtal Develop- ment after Susruta—Heredity—The Sex Question— Life	202-243
--	---------

CHAPTER VII.

HINDU DOCTRINE OF SCIENTIFIC METHOD.

PAGES

Doctrine of Scientific Method—Test of Truth—Perception—Observation and Experiment—Results in the Different Sciences—Fallacies of Observation—Doctrine of Inference—The Chárváka View—The Buddhists, their Analysis and Vindication of Inference—Causality and Identity of Essence—How to ascertain Concomitance—Specific Cause and Specific Effect—Canon of the Method of Subtraction—The Joint Method of Difference (Pañchakāraṇī)—Proof of the Method—Doubt and its Limits—The Nyāya Doctrine of Inference—Definition of a Cause—Unconditional Antecedent—The Doctrine of Anyathāsiddha—Elimination of the Irrelevant Factors—Nyāya Objection to the Method of Difference—The Nyāya Analysis of the Causal Relation Continued—Co-effects—Synchronisness of Cause and Effect—Plurality of Causes—The Nyāya Ground of Inference—Vyāpti or Unconditional Concomitance—Ascertainment of Vyāpti—Upādhi—Process of disproving suspected Upādhis—Tarka or Ūha—Difference between the Nyāya Method and Mill's Joint Method of Agreement—Other Instances of Vyāpti—Relation of Causality to Vyāpti—Plurality of Causes—Scientific Methods as subsidiary to General Methodology and the Ascertainment of Truth—Hypotheses—Conditions of a Legitimate Hypothesis—Nirṇaya or Verification of a Hypothesis—The Deduction Method—Navya Nyāya and its Significance in the History of Thought—Applied Logic—The Logic of the Particular Sciences—The Scientific Methods as applied to Therapeutics—The Scientific Methods as applied to Grammar and Philology—Conclusion	244-295
--	---------

173-262.

THE POSITIVE SCIENCES

OF THE

ANCIENT HINDUS

CHAPTER I.

THE MECHANICAL, PHYSICAL, AND CHEMICAL THEORIES OF THE ANCIENT HINDUS.

I PROPOSE in this paper to give a synoptic view of the mechanical, physical, and chemical theories of the ancient Hindus. A chronological survey, even if the materials for it were available, would be here of little account. The origins of Hindu natural philosophy in the speculations of the Bráhmaṇas and the Upanishads, or in the mythology of the Puráṇas, do not come within the scope of the present exposition, which relates to the results of systematic thought as directed to the phenomena and processes of Nature. I have therefore confined myself to an account of natural philosophy as expounded in the principal systems of Hindu thought. The Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala system accounts for the Universe on principles of cosmic evolution; the Vaiśeṣhika-Nyāya lays down the methodology of science, and elaborates the concepts of

mechanics, physics, and chemistry. The Vedānta, the Pūrva-Mīmāṃsā, and in a less degree the Bauddha, the Jaina, and the Chārvāka systems, make incidental contributions on points of special interest, but their main value in this regard is critical and negative. The principal authorities followed in this account—the Vyāsa-Bhāṣhya on Pātañjali's Sūtras, the Samhitā of Charaka, the Bhāṣhya of Prasastapāda, the Vārtika of Udyotakara, and the Vṛhat Samhitā of Varāhamihira—all centre round the Hindu Renaissance, the beginnings of the anti-Buddhist reaction in the fourth, fifth, and sixth centuries of the Christian era. Whenever I have made use of later authors, *e.g.* Kumārila, Śaṅkara, Śrīdhara, Vāchaspati, Udayana, Bhāskara, Jayanta, Varavara, Raghunātha, Vijñāna-bhikṣu, etc., I have taken care to see (except where the opposite is expressly mentioned) that no idea is surreptitiously introduced which is not explicitly contained in the earlier authors.

THE SĀṆKHYA-PĀTAÑJALA SYSTEM.

This system possesses a unique interest in the history of thought as embodying the earliest clear and comprehensive account of the process of cosmic evolution, viewed not as a mere metaphysical speculation but as a positive principle based on the conservation, the transformation, and the dissipation of Energy.

Prakṛiti: the Ultimate Ground.—The manifested world is traced in the Sāṅkhya to an unmanifested ground, *Prakṛiti*, which is conceived as formless and undifferentiated, limitless and ubiquitous, indestructible and undecaying, ungrounded and uncontrolled, without

beginning and without end. But the unity of Prakṛiti is a mere abstraction; it is in reality an undifferentiated manifold, an indeterminate infinite continuum of infinitesimal Reals. These Reals, termed Guṇas, may by another abstraction be classed under three heads: (1) Sattva, the Essence which manifests itself in a phenomenon, and which is characterised by this tendency to manifestation, the Essence, in other words, which serves as the medium for the reflection of Intelligence; (2) Rajas, Energy, that which is efficient in a phenomenon, and is characterised by a tendency to do work or overcome resistance; and (3) Tamas, Mass or Inertia, which counteracts the tendency of Rajas to do work, and of Sattva to conscious manifestation.

The ultimate factors of the Universe, then, are (1) Essence, or intelligence-stuff, (2) Energy, and (3) Matter, characterised by mass or inertia.

These Guṇas are conceived to be Reals, substantive entities—not, however, as self-subsistent or independent entities (प्रधान), but as interdependent moments in every real or substantive Existence.

Even Energy is substantive in this sense. The infinitesimals of Energy do not possess inertia or gravity, and are not therefore material, but they possess quantum and extensity (परिमाण—परिच्छिन्नत्व).

The very nature of Energy is to do work, to overcome resistance (रजःशूलं दधमभक्तं), to produce motion. All Energy is therefore ultimately kinetic; even potential Energy (अनुभूतवृत्तिशक्ति) is only the Energy of motion in imperceptible forms.

The Original Constituents and their Interaction.—Every phenomenon, it has been explained, consists of a three-fold *arche*, intelligible Essence, Energy, and Mass. In intimate union these enter into things as essential constitutive factors. The essence of a thing (*Sattva*) is that by which it manifests itself to intelligence, and nothing exists without such manifestation in the Universe of Consciousness (*समष्टिबुद्धि*). But the Essence is only one of three moments. It does not possess mass or gravity, it neither offers resistance nor does work. Next there is the element of *Tamas*, mass, inertia, matter-stuff, which offers resistance to motion as well as to conscious reflection (*तमः गुरु वरुणकम्*).

But the intelligence-stuff and the matter-stuff cannot do any work, and are devoid of productive activity in themselves. All work comes from *Rajas*, the principle of Energy, which overcomes the resistance of matter, and supplies even Intelligence with the Energy which it requires for its own work of conscious regulation and adaptation. (*अन्वान्वाभ्याम् अहङ्काराभ्यां सकार्योपननने राजसाहङ्कारः सहकारी भवति । लोकाचार्य - तत्त्वप्र-
खचित्प्रकरण ।*)

The *Gunas* are always uniting, separating, uniting again. (*अन्वान्वाभिपुनाः सर्वे, नैवानादिनन्दयोगो वियोगो वा उपलभ्यते ।*) Everything in the world results from their peculiar arrangement and combination. Varying quantities of Essence, Energy, and Mass, in varied groupings, act on one another, and through their mutual interaction and interdependence evolve from the indefinite or qualitatively indeterminate to the definite or qualitatively determinate. (*एते गुणाः परस्पररोपरकप्रविभागाः संयोगविभागधर्माः*

इतरेतरोपाद्येषां उपात्तिर्नतुर्जयः।—आसभाष्य।) But though co-operating to produce the world of effects, these divers moments with divers tendencies never coalesce. In the phenomenal product whatever Energy there is is due to the element of Rajas, and Rajas alone; all matter, resistance, stability is due to Tamas, and all conscious manifestation to Sattva. (परस्परान्नाङ्गाङ्गित्वेऽपि चर्तुर्भिन्नशक्तिप्रविभागाः—आसभाष्य। अन्योन्माङ्गाङ्गिभावेन उत्पादितेऽपि द्रुप्ये प्रकाशगुणः सत्त्वस्यैव क्रियागुणः रजसएव स्थितिगुणस्तमसएव—विज्ञानभिक्षु, योगशास्त्रिक on आसभाष्य, *ibid.* नैषां शक्तयः संज्ञोच्यन्ते—वाचस्पतिमिश्र, तत्त्ववैशारदी on आसभाष्य, *ibid.*)

The nature of the interaction is peculiar. In order that there may be evolution with transformation of Energy, there must be a disturbance of equilibrium, a preponderance of either Energy or Mass-resistance or Essence over the other moments. The particular Guna which happens to be predominant in any phenomenon becomes manifest in that phenomenon, and the others become latent, though their presence is inferred by their effect. For example, in any material system at rest the Mass is patent, the Energy latent, and the conscious manifestation sub-latent. In a moving body, the Rajas, Energy, is predominant (kinetic), while the Mass, or rather the resistance it offers, is overcome. In the volitional consciousness accompanied with movement, the transformation of Energy (or work done by Rajas) goes hand in hand with the predominance of the conscious manifestation, while the matter-stuff or Mass, though latent, is to be inferred from the resistance overcome. (प्रधानबेलायान् उपदक्षितसन्निधाना गुणत्वेऽपि च व्यापारमात्रेण प्रधानान्तर्गतानुमितान्निताः—आसभाष्य।)

The Starting-point.—The starting-point in the cosmic history is a condition of equilibrium or equipoise consisting in a uniform diffusion of the Reals. The tendencies to conscious manifestation, as well as the powers of doing work, are exactly counterbalanced by the resistances of the inertia or Mass: the process of cosmic evolution (परिणाम) is under arrest. (सत्त्वरजस्तमसो साम्यावस्था प्रकृतिः—Pravachana, Sutra 61, Chap. I. साम्यावस्था अन्तःकालावस्था अन्तःकालाधिकभावेन असंहतावस्था अकार्योपस्था इति निष्कर्षः—विज्ञानभिषु, *ibid.*)

Beginning of Evolution.—The transcendental (non-mechanical) influence of the Purusha (the Absolute) puts an end to this arrest, and initiates the process of creation. Evolution begins with the disturbance of the original equilibrium. How this is mechanically brought about is not very clear. A modern expounder of the Sāṅkhya supposes that the particles of Sattva, Rajas, and Tamas possess a natural affinity for other particles of their own class, and that when the transcendental influence of the Purusha ends the state of arrest, the affinity comes into play, breaks up the uniform diffusion, and leads to unequal aggregation, and therefore to the relative preponderance of one or more of the three Gunas over the others. Thus commences formative combination among the Reals, and consequent productive activity. (संहतनम् आरम्भकसंयोगः अन्तःकालाधिकभावेन अन्तःकालसंयोगविशेषः—Sutra 66, Chap. I., प्रवचनभाष्य—विज्ञानभिषु । पृथिवीपृथिवी पृथिवीत्वेनैव सत्त्वपृथिवीनाम् एकजातीयतया एकता । स्वजाती-योपहत्मादिना वृद्धिहासादिकं च युक्तम् *ibid.*, Sutra 128, Chap. I.)

Formation of Wholes or Systems—Collocation of Reals.—Creative transformation accompanied with

evolution of motion (परिस्पन्द) and work done by Energy (क्रिया) cannot take place without a peculiar collocation of the Reals (Gunas). To form wholes or systems (समुदय) it is essential that one Guna should for the moment be preponderant and the others co-operant. And this cannot be without an unequal aggregation which overthrows the original equilibrium (गुणवैषम्य, अनाधिकभाव)—in other words, without unequal forces or stresses coming into play in different parts of the system. (गुणविमर्ह—वाचस्पति । अर्कं सक्रियं परिस्पन्दवत् . . . समुदयः समवायः । स च गुणानां गुणप्रधानभावमन्तरेण न सम्भवति । न गुणप्रधानभावे वैषम्यं विना । न च वैषम्यमुपमर्होपमर्हकभावाद्गते ।—वाचस्पति, कौमुदी on Kārikā 16.)

The Formula of Evolution—Differentiation in Integration.—Evolution (परिणाम) in its formal aspect is defined as differentiation in the integrated (संसृष्टविशेष). In other words, the process of Evolution consists in the development of the differentiated (वैषम्य) within the undifferentiated (साम्यावस्था), of the determinate (विशेष) within the indeterminate (अविशेष), of the coherent (युतमिदं) within the incoherent (अयुतमिदं). The evolutionary series is subject to a definite law which it cannot overstep (परिणामक्रमनियम). The order of succession is not from the whole to parts, nor from parts to the whole, but ever from a relatively less differentiated, less determinate, less coherent whole to a relatively more differentiated, more determinate, more coherent whole. That the process of differentiation evolves out of homogeneity separate or unrelated parts, which are then integrated into a whole, and that this whole again breaks up by fresh differentiation into isolated factors

for a subsequent redintegration, and so on *ad infinitum*, is a fundamental misconception of the course of material evolution. That the antithesis stands over against the thesis, and that the synthesis supervenes and imposes unity *ab extra* on these two independent and mutually hostile moments, is the same radical misconception as regards the dialectical form of cosmic development. On the Sāṅkhya view, increasing differentiation proceeds *pari passu* with increasing integration within the evolving whole, so that by this two-fold process what was an incoherent indeterminate homogeneous whole evolves into a coherent determinate heterogeneous whole.

The different stadia in the order of cosmic evolution are characterised as follows :—

- (1) The inconceivable, the unknowable, the formless, of which no character can be predicated (अलिङ्ग), including Prakriti, or the Reals in a state of equilibrium.
- (2) The knowable, the empirical universe, cosmic matter of experience, things as matter or stuff of consciousness (लिङ्ग), comprising Mahat, the intelligible Essence of the cosmos, evolved by differentiation and integration within the formless, characterless, inconceivable Prakriti.
- (3) Individual but still indeterminate stuff bifurcating into two series—Subject-experience and Object-experience, comprising on the one hand the indeterminate unity of apperception, or the empirical Ego, as the co-ordinating principle of the Subject-series (अस्मिन्), and on the other hand

(though through the mediation of this subjective modification, अस्मिता or Abhāṅkāra) the indeterminate material potencies, the subtle vehicles of potential Energy (तन्मात्र, सूक्ष्मभूत), the ultimate subtle constituents of the Object-series (the material world). The previous stadium, the cosmic matter of Experience (लिङ्ग, महत्), evolves within itself, by differentiation and integration, an individuated but still indeterminate stuff in two co-ordinated series, Subject and Object, though the latter is mediated through the former.

- (4) Determinate stuff (विशेष) evolved within the indeterminate by further differentiation and integration, viz., in the series of Subject-experience, sensory and motor stuff; and in the Object-series, a corresponding atomic matter-stuff actualising the material potencies in the form of specific sensible Energies. The latter includes the different classes of Paramāṇus, the different kinds of atomic constituents of different kinds of gross matter (स्थूलभूत).
- (5) Coherent and integrated matter-stuff, individual substances, characterised by generic and specific properties, which however are not rigidly fixed, but fluent, being subject to a three-fold change and constantly evolving. (अपुनरिद्वयवर्धनानुगतः समूहः द्रव्यमिति पञ्चलिः—व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 44, Chap. III. सामान्यविशेषसमुदायो द्रव्यं—व्यासभाष्य, *ibid.* सामान्यविशेषात्मा जन्तवो धर्मो, *ibid.* धर्मिणी धर्मैल्लक्षणावस्थापरिणामः)

- (6) And so the cosmic series moves on in ascending stages of unstable equilibrium (विसदृशपरिणाम) until the reverse course of equilibration and dissipation of Energy (सदृशपरिणाम and साम्यावस्था), which even now constantly accompanies the evolution and transformation of Energy, completes the disintegration of the Universe into its original unmanifested ground, the unknowable Prakriti.

The order of Cosmic Evolution according to the आसभाष्य (Sutra 19, Pada II.) is shown below in a tabular form :—

Prakriti, the unmanifested unknowable ground

(गूढमव्यक्तमलिङ्गं)

Cosmic matter of experience (महत्, लिङ्गं)

SUBJECT SERIES (अविज्ञेय). → OBJECT SERIES (अविज्ञेय) :

evolved in the cosmic matter of experience but through the mediation of the individuated mind-stuff अस्मिता (Ahaṅkāra).

Individuated indeterminate mind-stuff (unity of apperception, empirical Ego (अस्मिता).

Individuated but indeterminate matter-stuff (subtile material potencies (तन्मात्र).

Determinate mind - stuff (विज्ञेय), sensory and motor psychoses, etc. (ज्ञानेन्द्रिय, कर्मेन्द्रिय and मनः).	Determinate matter-stuff (विज्ञेय), atomic and mole- cular constituents of gross matter (परमाणु— स्थूलभूत).
---	---

|

Coherent and integrated
 matter-stuff (अपुनसिद्धावयवः
 समूहः सङ्घातः द्रव्यं).

Individual substances, with
 generic and specific
 characters subject to
 constant change or evo-
 lution, *e.g.* inorganic
 objects composed of
 atoms or molecules
 (परमाणु), vegetable or-
 ganisms (वृक्ष), animal
 organisms (शरीर). (अपुन-
 सिद्धावयवः सङ्घातः शरीरं वृक्षः
 परमाणुरिति—व्यासभाष्य, Sutra
 44, Pada III.)

तत्र तत् संसृष्टं विविच्यते ज्ञानान्तिवृत्तेः, तथा षड्विज्ञेयाः लिङ्गमात्रे संसृष्टा
 विविच्यन्ते, परिणामक्रमनियमात्, तथा तेषु अविज्ञेयेषु भूतेन्द्रियाणि संसृष्टानि
 विविच्यन्ते, न विज्ञेयेभ्यः परं तत्त्वान्तरमस्ति तेषाम्नु धर्मैल्लक्षणावस्थापरिणामा
 व्याख्यायिष्यन्ते । (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 19, Pada II.)

N.B.—The usual order given in the Sāṅkhya-
 Pātañjala compendiums is as follows :—Prakṛiti, Mahat,
 Ahaṅkāra—and then the bifurcation, viz. 11 organs
 (sensory, motor and common sensori-motor) from Rājasic
 Ahaṅkāra, and Tanmātras from Tāmasic Ahaṅkāra—and

finally the *Paramānus* of the *Sthūla Bhūtas*. This is literally correct, but misses the significance of the doctrine of "differentiation within the integrated," according to which the *Tanmātras* are all evolved, through the medium of *Ahaṅkāra*, in the cosmic matter of Experience (*Mahat*).

The Conservation of Energy (and of Mass)—the Transformation of Energy.—The *Gunas* (*Reals*), though assuming an infinite diversity of forms and powers, can neither be created nor destroyed. The totality of the *Mass* (*Tamas*), as well as of *Energy* (*Rajas*), remains constant, if we take account both of the manifested and the unmanifested, the actual and the potential. But the individual products of the evolutionary process—the concrete phenomenal modes resulting from the combined action of the original *Mass*, *Energy*, and *Essence*—are subject to addition and subtraction, growth and decay, which are only due to changes of collocation, and consequent changes of state from the potential to the actual (in other words, from the future to the present and from the present to the past, in a time series)—changes which are illusorily ascribed to the *Reals* themselves. The different collocations of *Mass* and *Energy* give birth to the divers powers of things, the various forms of *Energy* which may be classed as like and unlike; indeed, the course of *Evolution* from the *Reals* conforms to a fixed law, not only as regards the order of succession, but also as regards the appearance (and mutual relations) of like and unlike *Energies*. And this transformation is constantly going on—the course of *Evolution* is not arrested for a moment.

गुणान् सङ्घर्षमनूपातिनः न प्रत्यस्तमयन्ते नोपनायन्ते व्यक्तिभिरेव
 क्षतीताऽनागतव्ययागमवर्तोभिः गुणान्वयिनीभिः उपजनाधायधर्मैका इव
 प्रत्ययभासन्ते (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 19, Pada II.) परिणामिनित्यता
 गुणानाम्। सङ्घर्षमिदं गुणानां सविशेषविशेषमाचम। (*ibid.*, Sutra 13,
 Pada IV.) एते गुणाः तुल्यजातोपातुल्यजातीयशक्तिभेदानुपातिनः (*ibid.*,
 Sutra 19, Pada II.) परिणामक्रमनियमात् (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 19,
 Pada II.) क्रमान्यत्वं परिणामान्यत्वे हेतुः (Patañjali, Sutra 15,
 Pada III.) प्रकृतिः परिणामनशोला क्षणमप्यपरिणम्य नावतिष्ठते।

The Doctrine of Causation, a corollary from the conservation and transformation of Energy—the Principle of Collocation—the Storing-up and the Liberation of Energy:—

The Sāṅkhya view of causation follows at once as a corollary from this doctrine of the conservation and transformation of Energy. As the total Energy remains the same while the world is constantly evolving, cause and effect are only more or less evolved forms of the same ultimate Energy. The sum of effects exists in the sum of causes in a potential (or unevolved) form. The grouping or collocation alone changes, and this brings on the manifestation of the latent powers of the Gunas, but without creation of anything new. What is called the (material) cause or sum of material causes is only the power which is efficient in the production, or rather the vehicle, of the power. This power is the unmanifested (or potential) form of the Energy set free (उद्भूतवृत्ति) in the effect. But the concomitant conditions are necessary to call forth the so-called material cause into activity. When the favourable combination or co-operation of concomitants is wanting, there is no manifestation of the

effect. The question is—what is the aid which the concomitant conditions render to the determination (and production) of the effect existing in potency in its material cause? First there is the merely mechanical view as illustrated by some commonplace examples, *e.g.*, the manifestation of the figure of the statue in the marble block by the causal efficiency of the sculptor's art, or of the oil in the sesamum-seed by pressing, or of the grain of rice out of the paddy by the process of husking. In these cases the manifestation of an effect is only its passage from potentiality to actuality, a stadium in the process of evolution from possible (future) existence to actual (present) existence; and the concomitant condition (सहकारिज्ञाति) or efficient cause (निमित्तकारण), the sculptor's chiselling, the pressing, the husking, is a sort of mechanical or instrumental help to this passage or transition. कार्यज्ञातिमन्त्रमेव उपादान-कारणत्वम् । सा ज्ञातिः कार्यस्य अनागतावस्था एव । स एव विशेषः (उत्पत्तेः प्राक् कारणे विशेषः) जस्माभिः कार्यस्य अनागतावस्था इत्युच्यते । (विज्ञानभिक्षु-प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 115, Chap. I.) अभिप्यक्तिः वक्ष्यमानावस्था । कारणव्यापारोऽपि कार्यस्य वक्ष्यमानलक्षणपरिणाममेव जनयति । यथा शिलानप्यस्य प्रतिमायाः लैङ्गिकव्यापारेण अभिप्यक्तिनात्र तिलस्य तैलस्य च निम्नोदनेन धान्यस्य तद्गुलस्य च अवपातेन । (विज्ञानभिक्षु-प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 129, Chap. I.)

These mechanical examples of the Kapila-Sāṅkhya have the merit of simplicity, but the Patañjali-Sāṅkhya brushes them aside, and explains causation on the basis of the conservation and transformation of Energy advancing it as the liberation of potential Energy existing stored up in a Guna collocation (the sum of material causes), the liberation following on the action

of the proximate efficient cause, or concomitant condition (निमित्तकारण).

The causal operation of concomitant conditions (efficient causes) lies only in this, that they supply a physical stimulus which liberates the potential Energy stored up in a given collocation. Everything in the phenomenal world is but a special collocation of the ultimate Reals (Energy, Mass, and Essence). The sum of (material) causes potentially contains the Energy manifested in the sum of effects; and in the passage from potency to actualisation, the effectuating condition (the concomitant cause), when it is itself accomplished, is only a step in the evolutionary series, which adds a specific stimulus, and renders determinate that which was previously indeterminate. When the effectuating condition is added to the sum of material conditions in a given collocation, all that happens is that a stimulus is imparted which removes the arrest, disturbs the relatively stable equilibrium, and brings on a liberation of Energy (उद्भूतपुच्छिशक्ति) together with a fresh collocation (गुणसन्निवेशविशेष). सङ्गमिदं गुणानां सन्निवेशविशेषमात्रम् इति परमार्थतो गुणात्मानः (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 13, Pada IV.) सतश्च फलस्य निमित्तं वक्ष्यमानोक्तारणे समर्थं न अपूर्वोपजनने । मिदं निमित्तं नैमित्तिकस्य विशेषानुग्रहणं कुरुते । नापृष्ठमुत्पादयति । (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 12, Pada IV.).

Describing the production of bodies ("organic vehicles") for individual souls out of matter of Prakriti, under the influence of their merit and demerit, as concomitant conditions, Patañjali points out that non-material concomitants like merit and demerit do not supply any moving force or Energy to the sum of

material conditions, but only remove the arrest (the state of relatively stable equilibrium) in a given collocation, even as the owner of a field removes the barrier in flooding his field from a reservoir of water. This description is intended to represent the super-physical influence of non-material concomitants (or causes) like volition, merit and demerit, etc., but the causal operation of a material concomitant condition is essentially the same; there is the same reservoir of stored-up Energy in a given collocation, the same condition of arrest or relatively stable equilibrium, the same liberation of the stored-up potential Energy which flows along the line of least resistance; the only difference being that in the case of material concomitants the stimulus which removes the arrest is physical, instead of being transcendental as in the case of non-material causes like will, merit and demerit, etc.

The Vyása-Bhāshya helps us to a clear mental representation of the details of this process:—As the owner of many fields can irrigate, from a field which is already flooded, others of the same or a lower level, without forcing the waters thereto with his hands, and merely by making an opening in the barrier or dyke, on which the waters rush in by their own force; or, further, as the same person cannot force these waters, or the earthy matters held in solution therein, into the roots of the rice plants, but only removes the obstructive grasses and weeds, on which the fluids of their own power enter the roots;—such is the action of an effectuating condition (निमित्त) added to a sum of material causes or conditions.

निमित्तम् अप्रयोजकं प्रवृत्तीनां वरणभेदस्तु ततः शेषविकवत् । (Patañjali, Sutra 3, Pada IV.) न हि धर्मादि निमित्तं यथा शेषविकः केदारान् अपां पूरणात् केदारं पिप्पलावपिपुः समं निम्बं वा निम्बतरं वा नायः पाणिनाप-
करोति खापरस्य तु खासो भिनत्ति तस्मिन् भिन्ने स्वयमेवापः केदारान्तरम्
आप्रावयन्ति ।

Chain of Causation—Fixed Order.—The order of Evolution with the transformation of the Energies follows a definite law. The unalterable chain of causes and effects in the phenomenal world illustrates this fixed order. But though the cosmic order is one and fixed, it comprehends divers series arising from different combinations of the original Gunas, which constitute subordinate or particular laws of cause and effect (क्रमान्तत्वे परिणामान्तत्वे हेतुः, Patañjali, Sutra 15, Pada III.).

What we call the qualities of things are only modes of Energy acting in those collocations. योग्यतापञ्चिन्ना धर्मिणः शक्तिरेव धर्मः—स च फलप्रसवभेदानुमितसद्भावः । (आसभाष्य, Sutra 14, Pada III.) ते सत्त्वनी धर्मो वसंताना व्यक्तात्मानः, अतीताभ्यागताः सुखात्मानः सर्व्वेभिर्दं गुणानां सन्निवेशमात्रमिति परमाद्यतो गुणात्मानः । (आसभाष्य, Sutra 3, Pada IV.). And these various Energies are sometimes actual (kinetic), sometimes potential, rising to actuality, and sometimes sub-latent, subsiding from actuality into sub-latency. In fact, the original Energy is one and ubiquitous, and everything therefore exists in everything else, *potentialiter* (सर्व्वे सङ्घात्मकमिति), without prejudice to the generic and specific differences of things (जात्यनुच्छेदेन सर्व्वे सङ्घात्मकं). Inorganic matter, vegetable organisms, and animal organisms are essentially and ultimately one (तलभूम्योः पारिणामिकं रसादिवैद्यरूपं स्वावरेषु दृष्टं तथा स्वावराणां जलमेव जलमानां स्वावरेषु) so far as Mass and Energy are

concerned, but the varied forms of Energy and the generic and specific qualities (or properties) of things, which are but modes of Energy, follow a definite unalterable law in the order of their appearance and succession, under conditions of space, time, mode, and causality, and hence all effects do not manifest themselves at once. देशकालाकारनिमित्तापवन्धात् न खलु समानकालम् ज्ञानानभिष्यक्तिः (*ibid.*, Sutra 14, Pada III.) यो यस्य धर्मस्य समनन्तरो धर्मः स तस्य क्रमः । पिष्टः प्रच्यवते घट उपजायते इति धर्मपरिणामक्रमः । लघ्वणापरिणामक्रमः घटस्य जनागतभावात् वर्तमानभावक्रमः, तथा पिष्टस्य वर्तमानभावात् जतोत्भावक्रमः । (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 15, Pada III.).

Time, Space, and the Causal Series.—A Tanmātra (infra-atomic particle of subtile matter) is conceived by our understanding to stand in three relations—(1) position in Space (देशावच्छिन्न), (2) position in the Time-series (कालावच्छिन्न), and (3) position in the Causal-series (निमित्तावच्छिन्न).

These three relations are the work of the intuitive stage of knowledge (निश्चिन्त्यप्रज्ञा) as opposed to the conceptual (सविक्त्यप्रज्ञा). But this is not the pure relationless intuition of Reality (निश्चिन्तारा निश्चिन्त्यप्रज्ञा), which may be termed intellectual intuition, but the intuition that imposes its forms on the Real substrate (सविचारा निश्चिन्त्यप्रज्ञा) or in other words empirical intuition.

तच्च भूतवृक्षेषु अभिष्यक्तधर्मकेषु देशकालनिमित्तानुभवावच्छिन्नेषु या समापत्तिः सा सविचारा इत्युच्यते । तत्रापि एकपुद्गलनिर्घोषमेव उदितधर्मपिशिष्टं भूतवृक्षमालम्बनोभूतं समाधिप्रज्ञायानुपतिष्ठते । (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 44, Pada I.).

Infinite Time is a non-entity objectively considered, being only a construction of the understanding

(बुद्धिनिर्माण) based on the relation of antecedence and sequence, in which the members of the phenomenal series are intuited to stand to one another. These phenomenal changes as intuited by us in the empirical consciousness fall into a series, which the understanding conceives as order in Time. The Time-series, then, is a *schema* of the understanding for representing the course of Evolution. The *schema* of the understanding supervenes on the phenomenal world as order in Time, and hence in the empirical consciousness the Time-series appears to have an objective reality, and to form a continuum. As there is an ultimate and irreducible unit of extensive quantity (परिमाणु) in the Gunas or infinitesimal Reals of Prakriti, which are without constituent parts, so the moment may be conceived as the ultimate and irreducible unit of this Time-continuum as represented in the empirical consciousness. A moment therefore cannot be thought of as containing any parts standing in the relation of antecedence and sequence. If change is represented by the Time-series, a moment as the unit of time may be supposed to represent the unit of change. Now all physical change may be reduced to the motion of atoms in space, and we may therefore define the moment as representing the ultimate unit of such change—viz. the (instantaneous) transit of an atom (or rather a Tanmātra) from one point in space to the next succeeding point. Even an atom has constituent parts (the Tanmātras), and hence an atom must take more than one moment to change its position. The motion of that which is absolutely simple and without parts from

one point in space to the next must be instantaneous, and conceived as the absolute unit of change (and therefore of time, *क्षण*). If this is held to be an irreducible absolute unit, it will follow that what we represent as the Time-continuum is really discrete. Time is of one dimension. Two moments cannot co-exist; neither does any series of moments exist in reality. Order in Time is nothing but the relation of antecedence and sequence, between the moment that is and the moment that went just before. But only one moment, the present, exists. The future and the past have no meaning apart from potential and sub-latent phenomena. One kind of transformation to which a thing is subject is that it changes from the potential to the actual, and from the actual to the sub-latent. This may be called the change of mark (*लक्षणापरिणाम*) as opposed to change of quality (*धर्मेपरिणाम*) and the change due to duration or lapse of time (*अवस्थापरिणाम*). The present is the mark of actuality, the future the mark of potentiality, and the past of sub-latency, in a phenomenon. Only one single moment is actual, and the whole Universe evolves in that one single moment. The rest is but potential or sub-latent.

अद्यतत्क्रमयोर्नास्ति वस्तुसमाहार इति बुद्धिसमाहारः मुहूर्त्ताहोरावादयः । स सत्यं कालः वस्तुशून्यो बुद्धिनिर्माणः शब्दज्ञानानुधातो लौकिकानां व्युत्पत्त-
दशैर्नानां वस्तुस्वरूप इव जपभासते । अद्यस्तु वस्तुपतितक्रमावलम्बो । क्रमश्च
अद्यानन्तर्यामा । तं कालविदः काल इति साचक्षते योगिनः । न च द्वौ
अद्यौ सह भवतः, क्रमश्च न द्वयोः सहसुबोरसम्भवात् पूर्वस्मादुत्तरभाविनो यदा-
नन्तर्यं अद्यस्य स क्रमः । तस्मात् वर्तमानं रूपैकः अद्यः न पूर्वोत्तरअद्याः
सन्तीति तस्माच्चास्ति तत्समाहारः । ये तु भूतभाविनः अद्याः ते परिणामान्विता
प्याम्बेयाः । तेनैकेन अद्येन कृत्वो लोकः परिणाममनुभवति, तत्तद्वशात्तदाः

सत्यतो धर्माः । यथाऽपकर्षपर्यन्तं द्रव्यं परमाणुः एवं परमाणुपर्यन्तः कालः क्षणः । यावत्ता वा समयेन चलितः परमाणुः पृष्ठदेशं ज्ञात् उन्नतदेशम् उपसम्पद्येत स कालः क्षणः, तत्रवाहाविच्छेदस्तु क्षणः । (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 52, Pada III).

Vijñāna-bhikṣu points out that this does not amount to a denial of Time. It means that Time has no real (or objective) existence apart from the "moment." But the latter is real, being identical with the unit of change in phenomena (गुणपरिणामस्य क्षणत्ववचनात्). But even this is real only for our empirical (relative) consciousness (सुचित्तदर्शन), which intuits the relation of antecedence and sequence into the evolving Reals (Gunas), in the stage of "empirical intuition" (सविचारा निर्विकल्पप्रज्ञा). The "intellectual intuition" (निर्विचारा निर्विकल्पप्रज्ञा), on the other hand, apprehends the Reals as they are, without the imported empirical relations of Space, Time, and Causality.

Space as Extension and Space as Position.—Space must be distinguished as *Desa* (locus, or rather extension) and *Dik* (relative position). Space (*Dik*) as the totality of position, or as an order of co-existent points, is wholly relative to the understanding, like order in Time, being constructed on the basis of relations of position intuited by our empirical (or relative) consciousness. But there is this difference between Space-order and Time-order: there is no unit of Space as position (*Dik*), though we may conceive a unit of Time, viz. the moment (क्षण), regarded as the unit of change in the phenomenal or causal series (परमाणुक्रिया—गुणपरिणामस्य क्षणत्ववचनात्—योगवाङ्मय, Sutra 51, Pada III). Spatial position (*Dik*) results only from

the different relations in which the all-pervasive Ākāśa stands to the various finite (or bounded) objects. On the other hand, Space as extension or locus of a finite body, Desa (देशः स्थिताधारः), has an ultimate unit, being analysable into the infinitesimal extensive quantity inherent in the Reals (Gunas) of Prakriti. (गुणप्रकृते-
रशुपरिणामः—योगवार्तिकम् । एतेन निम्ना दिगपि अग्रामाशिकी व्याख्याता,
सामान्यतो दिग्व्यवहारभावात् । पृष्ठादिव्यवहारस्य दिगुपाधिभिरेव सम्भवात् ।
सामान्यतः कालदिग्व्यवहारसंख्येयि आकाशादेव तदुपपन्नेषु । कालाच्च
दिग्मये विशेषः यत् कालः स्वरूप इष्यते, दिक् तु सर्वैषैव नेष्यते ।)

The Causal-Series.—The relation of Cause and Effect has been already explained. It only remains to add that the category of causality is mediated through the *schema* of order in Time. The empirical intuition first superimposes relations of antecedence and sequence on changing phenomena (the evolving Gunas or Reals), and the understanding out of these relations creates order in Time. The empirical intuition then intuits the phenomenal series of transformations of Energy in this Time-order, and in so doing imports the relation of cause and effect into the course of Nature. (कार्यकारणभावादीनां
खण्डवदितत्वात्—योगवार्तिकम्, Sutra 51, Pada III.)

The Dissipation of Energy (and of Mass)—their Dissolution into the Formless Prakriti.—Cosmic Evolution (परिणाम) is a two-fold process, creative as well as destructive, dissimilative as well as assimilative, katabolic as well as anabolic (अनुलोमसर्ग and विलोमसर्ग, विसृष्टपरिणाम and सदृष्टपरिणाम). In one aspect there is the aggregation (unequal aggregation) of Mass and Energy, with consequent transformation of Energy, resulting in the creation of inorganic as well as organic

matter, and the genesis of worlds. The successive steps of this process may be described as (1) unequal aggregation with storing-up of Energy in a certain collocation, under a state of arrest (*i.e.* in a state of relatively stable equilibrium), (2) a stimulus removing the arrest and disturbing the equilibrium, and (3) liberation of the Energy, moving on to a fresh collocation, fresh aggregation, arrest, and equilibrium. The process of the world thus moves on from equilibrium to equilibrium, and the result of that process is the development of a coherent determinate heterogeneous whole (लिङ्ग, अविशेष, विशेष, अयुक्तसिद्धावयवसमूह, युक्तसिद्धावयवसमूह) in what is essentially an incoherent indeterminate homogeneous whole (अलिङ्ग).

But there is a second aspect of this evolutionary process. Unequal aggregations are unstable; there is a constant tendency in things to go back to the original stable equilibrium, the state of uniform equal diffusion of Reals. This process is called the resolution of like to like (सदृशपरिणाम), consisting in assimilation and dissipation, and being the exact opposite of the process of "differentiation in the integrated" which has evolved the Cosmos. The collocations of Mass, Energy, and Essence are always breaking up, and the Energy, as well as the Mass, however slowly, however imperceptibly, are being dissipated, *i.e.* dissolved into the original formless Prakṛiti, a state of permanent equilibrium and arrest, from which there is, and can be, no return, except under the transcendental influence of the Absolute at the commencement of a new creative cycle. Not that there is a destruction of the Mass or Energy,

but a dissipation or dissolution into a condition of equal uniform diffusion from which there is no return. This is not the phenomenon of kinetic Energy disappearing and becoming potential or sub-latent, for in such cases there is restitution or reconversion by natural means. When this reverse current of assimilation (and dissipation) prevails over the current of dissimulation (and integration), the Universe will disintegrate more and more, until it disappears in the formless Prakṛiti, its unknowable source and ground. (*Vide* तत्त्वत्रय and कीमुदी.)

The Evolution of Matter (तन्मात्रिक सृष्टि). — The ultimate constitution of Matter is a question of the profoundest interest in the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala system. Three stages clearly stand out in the genesis of Matter:—(1) the original infinitesimal units of Mass or inertia, absolutely homogeneous and ubiquitous, on which Energy does work, when the original equilibrium comes to an end (भूतादि—तन्मात्राद्वार); (2) the infra-atomic unit-potentials, charged with different kinds of Energy, which result from the action of Energy on the original units of Mass (तन्मात्र); and (3) the five different classes of atoms, the minutest divisions of which gross matter is capable, but which are themselves complex Tanmātrīc systems (सूक्ष्मभूतपरमाणु).

The first stadium, Bhūtādi, is absolutely homogeneous and absolutely inert, being devoid of all physical and chemical characters (रूपादिभिरसंयुतं) except quantum or mass (परिच्छिन्नत्व, परिमाण); and this admits neither of addition nor of subtraction, can neither be created nor destroyed. The second stadium, Tanmātra, represents subtile matter, vibratory, impingent, radiant, etc.,

instinct with potential energy. These "potentials" arise from the unequal aggregation of the original Mass-units in different proportions and collocations with an unequal distribution of the original Energy (Rajas). (तन्मात्र-रूपादेः किं कारणम् इति चेत् स्वकारणद्रव्याणां सूनाधिकभावेन अन्योऽन्यं प्रति संयोगविशेष एव—स्वजातीयोपपन्नादिना वृद्धिहासादिकं च युक्तं ।) The Tanmātras possess something more than quantum of Mass and Energy; they possess physical characters, some of them penetrability (अपकाशदान), others powers of impact or pressure, others radiant heat, others again capability of viscous and cohesive attraction. In intimate relation to these physical characters they also possess the potentials of the energies represented by sound, touch, colour, taste, and smell; but being subtile matter, they are devoid of the peculiar forms (विशेष) which these "potentials" assume in particles of gross matter like the atoms and their aggregates. In other words, the potentials lodged in subtile matter must undergo peculiar transformations by new groupings or collocations to be classed among sensory stimuli—gross matter being supposed to be matter endued with properties of the class of sensory stimuli, though in the minutest particles thereof the sensory stimuli may be infra-sensible (अतीन्द्रिय but not अनुद्भूत). (तस्मिन्सत्सिन्धुतन्मात्राः ते च अविशेषिणः । ते च पदार्थाः ज्ञानघोरमृदाख्यैः स्थूलगतशब्दादिविशेषैः शून्या स्वरूपत्वात् । तेषां ज्ञानादिविशेषशून्यशब्दादिमत्त्वमेव भूतानां शब्दादितन्मात्रत्वम् ।)

The Tanmātras, then, are infra-atomic particles charged with specific potential energies. First, the "potential" of the sound-stimulus is lodged in one class of particles, Tanmātras which possess the physical

energy of vibration (परिस्पन्द), and serve to form the radicle of the ether-atom (आकाशपरमाणु); then the potential of the tactile stimulus is lodged in another class of Tanmātras, particles which possess the physical energy of impact or mechanical pressure in addition to that of vibration, and serve to form the radicle of the air-atom (Vāyu Paramānu); next, the potential of the colour-stimulus is lodged in a third class of Tanmātras, particles which are charged with the energy of radiant heat-and-light, in addition to those of impact and vibration, and serve to form the nucleus of the light-and-heat corpuscle; then the potential of the taste-stimulus is lodged in other Tanmātras, particles which possess the energy of viscous attraction, in addition to those of heat, impact, and vibration, and which afterwards develop into the atom of water; and, lastly, the potential of the smell-stimulus is lodged in a further class of Tanmātras, particles which are charged with the energy of cohesive attraction, in addition to those of viscous attraction, heat, impact, and vibration, and which serve to form the radicle of the earth-atom.

पृथिव्येशोऽः तद्व्याप्तं शब्दतन्मात्रं स्पर्शतन्मात्रं रूपतन्मात्रं रसतन्मात्रं गन्ध-
तन्मात्रं च इत्येकद्वित्रिचतुस्त्वलक्षणाः शब्दादयः पञ्चाविशेषाः । (व्यासभाष्य,
Sutra 19, Pada II.) अहङ्कारात् शब्दतन्मात्रं तत्तद्वाहङ्कारसहकृतात्
शब्दतन्मात्रात् शब्दस्पर्शगुणं स्पर्शतन्मात्रम् । एवंक्रमेण एकैकगुणवृद्धा तन्मात्राणि
उत्पद्यन्ते । (प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 62, Chap. I.)

शब्दादीनां मूर्तिसमानजातीयानां एकः परिणामः पृथिवीपरमाणुः तन्मात्रा-
वयवः । भूतान्तरेषु अपि खेहीष्यप्रणानित्वाण्वकाशदानानि उपादाय सामान्यं
एकविकारारम्भः समापेयः । (व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 14, Pada IV.) तद्व्याप्तं ।
गन्धतन्मात्रं पञ्चैयित्वा चतुस्तन्मात्राणां खेहजातीयानां एकः परिणामः जल-
परमाणुः तेषां च महाजलादिः । एवं गन्धरसौ पञ्चैयित्वा त्रीष्यजातीयानां

चित्तमात्राणां तेजोऽणुः तेभ्यः महातेजसादिः । एवं गन्धरसरूपाणां पञ्चैनात्
 द्वाभ्यां वाय्वणुः तेभ्यः महावाय्वादिः । एवं शुद्धतन्मात्रादहङ्कारांशसहकृतात्
 साक्षाशाणुः तेभ्यः महासाक्षादिः ।

विज्ञानभिष्यु remarks : खलु दर्शने खलु सिद्धान्तः शुद्धादितन्मात्रपञ्चके
 कादितन्त्रेहादितन्त्रेऽङ्गाः पृथिवीत्वादिनामयः सन्ति । (योगवासिक, Sutra 14,
 Pada IV.).

Before explaining the genesis of atoms it is necessary to say something about *Ākāśa*, which is the link between the infra-atomic particles (*Tanmātras*) and atoms (*Paramāṇus*). *Ākāśa* corresponds in some respects to the ether of the physicists, and in others to what may be called proto-atom (*protyle*). In one aspect *Ākāśa* is all-pervasive (*विशु*), and devoid of the property of impenetrability which characterises even the infra-atomic potential units (*Tanmātras*). In another aspect *Ākāśa* is described as having originated out of the mass, or inertia, in *Prakṛiti* (*Bhūtādi*) when the latter became charged with the first potential (the sound-potential). *Vijñāna-bhikshu*, in the *Yoga-Vārtika*, boldly tackles the difficulty. *Ākāśa*, he explains, has two forms—original and derivative, non-atomic and atomic. The original *Ākāśa* is the undifferentiated formless *Tamas* (mass in *Prakṛiti*, matter-rudiment—*Bhūtādi*), which is devoid of all potentials, and is merely the all-pervasive seat or vehicle of the ubiquitous original Energy (*Rajas*). This *Ākāśa* must not be confounded with vacuum, which is merely negative (*आवरणभाव*—un-occupiedness), though it must be conceived as all-pervasive, occupying the same space as the various forms of gross matter (*समानदेशकम्*—*आवकाशस्वरूपम्* *आकाशं*—योगवासिक), and therefore devoid of

the property of impenetrability (मूर्तान्तरासमानदेशत्वे—योगवाञ्छिक) which characterises atomic matter. But when the original equilibrium (साम्यावस्था) comes to an end, unequal aggregations form collocations in different groups and proportions of the three Gunas (सूनाधिकभावेन अन्योन्य संयोगविशेषः संहनन—विज्ञानभिद्यु, प्रवचनभाष्य and योगवाञ्छिक). The transformation of Energy now begins—working on a collocation of mass (with Essence) (गुणान्तरोपसमृद्धे सदर्शतः—विज्ञानभिद्यु, योगवाञ्छिक); it first gives rise to the sound-potential (शब्दजननयोग्यार्थरूपेण परिणमति—विज्ञानभिद्यु), and the atomic *Ākāśa* (proto-atom, protyle) is but an integration of the original unit of mass charged with this vibration-potential. This vibratory (or rather rotary) ether-atom (आकाशाणु) is integrated, limited (परिच्छिन्न), and as such cannot occupy the same space with other (subsequently integrated) atoms. But this proto-atomic integration of *Ākāśa* (कार्यआकाश) is formed everywhere, and, itself residing in the ubiquitous non-atomic *Ākāśa* (कारणाकाश—अवकाशरूपमाकाश), forms the universal medium in which air or gas atoms, light-and-heat corpuscles, and other atoms move and float about.

वायोरावरणम् । यदि हि अवकाशरूपम् आकाशं न स्यात् तदा मूर्तद्रव्येषु स्वात्पादिषु सनस्तेजआदिप्रवेशो न स्यात् (विज्ञानभिद्यु, योगवाञ्छिक, Sutra 40, Pada III.) आकाशं हि कार्यकारणरूपेण द्विविधम् । तत्र कारणाकाशं तमोगुणविशेषतयैव व्यवहियते । तदानीम् आकाशताव्यञ्जकशब्दादिगुणविशेषाभावात् । तच्च कारणाकाशं गुणान्तरोपसमृद्धे सदर्शतः आदी शब्दजननयोग्यार्थरूपेण परिणमते । ततश्च अगुसङ्घातेन पृथिवीयदेव महाभूताकाशम् अहङ्कारापेक्षया परिच्छिन्नं वायोरावरणम् उच्यते (विज्ञानभिद्यु, योगवाञ्छिक, Sutra 40, Pada III.).

The Genesis of the Infra-Atomic Unit-Potentials (Tanmātras) and of the Atoms.—The subject of the

genesis and the structure of the Tanmātras and the Paramānus was a fascinating one to these ancient thinkers, and a wide divergence of views prevailed. I will here notice several typical views—those of the Vishnu Purāna, Parāsara, Patañjali, and a certain school of Vedāntists reported in the तन्मत्ररूपण.

I. A famous passage in the Vishnu Purāna explains the genesis and the structure of the Tanmātras and of the Bhūtas (Paramānus) in the following manner:—

The first Tanmātra originated from the rudiment-matter (Bhūtādi), the individuated but still indeterminate potential-less Mass in Prakṛiti, under the action of Energy (उपहृन्नातः परिणमयन्ति—प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 62, Ch. I.) by a process of disintegration and emanation (विकुञ्चणः—विष्णुपुराण—एकविकारारम्भः—व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 14, Pada IV. विकरणभावः विकीर्णतासभावा व्यापिता इति यावत्, योगवार्तिक on Patañjali's Sutra—मनोजचित्वं विकरणभावः etc.) in the menstruum, or surrounding medium of the unindividuated cosmic mass (Mahat, महतावृतः).

This first subtile matter, the first result of "Mass-disintegration" and Energy-transformation, is charged with the sound-potential, the potential of vibration or oscillation (परिस्पन्द). It is called the sound-potential (शब्दतन्मात्र).

This is typical of the genesis (and structure) of the other Tanmātras (kinds of subtile matter). In each of the remaining cases, an atomic Mass charged with actual specific energies (भूतपरमाणु) disintegrates and emanates, and thus evolves a form of subtile matter (a kind of Tanmātra) under the action of Energy, and always in the same menstruum or surrounding medium

—that of Bhútádi, the super-subtile. Each kind of subtile matter becomes charged with a new potential in addition to the potentials already evolved. The genesis of an atom, a Bhúta-Paramánu, is a quite different process. Here the unit-potential (Tanmátra) receives an accretion of Mass, and by a sort of condensation and collocation evolves an atom (Bhúta-Paramánu).

The genesis and structure of the Tanmátras and the Bhúta-Paramánu are worked out below :—

1. The super-subtile inviduated Mass (rudiment-matter, Bhútádi), under the action of the original Energy (रजः) disintegrates and emanates (विकुरुते) in the menstruum or surrounding medium (समावरण) of Mahat cosmic super-subtile Mass, and evolves a form of subtile matter (तन्मात्र), which becomes charged with the sound-potential (vibration-potential, परिस्पन्द), and is called the unit of sound-potential (शब्दतन्मात्र).
2. This subtile matter, the Mass, charged with sound-potential, receives an accretion of Mass from the rudiment-matter (Bhútádi), and by condensation and collocation evolves the Ákása Bhúta, the atomic Ákása, the proto-atom charged with the specific Energy of the sound-stimulus (actual vibratory motion). (स एव भूतादिः शब्द-तन्मात्रात् सङ्घटितायात् शब्दगुणकम् आकाशं समर्ज्यते । तया च अहङ्कारशब्दतन्मात्राभ्यां मिलित्वा आकाशं मृन्यते—योगवासिष्ठ on the Vishnu Purána passage, Sutra 14, Pada IV.)
3. This proto-atom, the atomic Ákása, charged with its actual specific Energy, again disintegrates and

emanates, under the action of the original Energy and in the menstruum of the rudiment-matter (super-subtile Mass), and thus evolves another kind of subtile matter (Tanmātra) which becomes charged with the touch-potential (the potential of impact or mechanical pressure—*प्रक्षामित्व, वहनशीलत्व*) in addition to the sound-potential (vibration-potential—*परिस्पन्द*) and is called the unit of touch-potential (*स्पर्शतन्मात्र*).

4. Next, this subtile matter, the Mass charged with touch- (and sound-) potential, i.e. with the potentials of vibration and impact, receives an accretion of Mass again from the rudiment-matter (Bhūtādi), and by condensation and collocation evolves the Vāyu Bhūta, a kind of gaseous matter or air of which the atoms are charged with the actual specific energy of the touch-stimulus, i.e., with actual energy of impact in addition to the actual energy of vibratory motion.
5. Next, the atom of Vāyu, so charged with the actual specific energy of impact and vibration, again disintegrates and emanates, under the action of the original Energy, and in the same menstruum or surrounding medium of the rudiment-matter (super-subtile Mass—Bhūtādi), and thus evolves another kind of subtile matter (Tanmātra), which becomes charged with the heat-potential (*शीघ्र-रूप, heat-and-light potential*) in addition to the impact-potential and the vibration-potential, and is called the unit of colour-potential (*रूपतन्मात्र*).

6. Now this subtile matter, this radiant matter, charged with light-and-heat potential, and also with impact- and vibration-potential, receives an accretion of Mass again from the rudiment-matter (Bhútádi), and by condensation and collocation evolves the Tejas Bhúta, the light-and-heat corpuscle, which is charged with the specific Energy of the colour-stimulus, i.e. radiates actual heat and light (विकिरण) in addition to manifesting the energy of impact (impingency) and of vibration (or oscillation).
7. Next, this atom or light-and-heat corpuscle disintegrates, and emanates as before a form of subtile matter charged with the taste-potential (रसतन्मात्र), in addition to the three potentials already generated, and also with the physical potential of viscous attraction.
8. This subtile matter charged with the taste-potential and with the potential of viscous attraction condenses, and collocates as before into the water-atom, which manifests the actual specific energies of viscous attraction and the taste-stimulus.
9. The viscous water-atom charged with the actual specific energy of the taste-stimulus disintegrates, and emanates as before a form of subtile matter charged with the smell-potential in addition to the four potentials already generated and also with the potential of cohesive attraction.
10. This subtile matter charged with the smell-potential and with the potential of cohesive

attraction condenses, and collocates as before into the earth-atom, which manifests the actual specific energies of cohesive attraction and the smell-stimulus.

Vijñāna-bhikshu, in the *Yoga-Vártika*, briefly summarises the *Vishṇu Purāṇa* process as follows :—

Bhútádi as radicle in conjunction with Mahat produces the sound-potential, which as radicle in conjunction with Bhútádi produces Ákása, which as radicle in conjunction with Bhútádi produces the touch-potential, which as radicle in conjunction with Bhútádi produces Váyu, which as radicle in conjunction with Bhútádi produces the colour-potential, which as radicle in conjunction with Bhútádi produces Tejas, and so on.

In this brief summary he does not bring out the force of विकुञ्चयः (the disintegrating process) and the distinction between the genesis of subtile and gross matter (*Tanmātra* and *Bhúta*).

यथा प्रधानेन महान्, महता स तत्पावृतः ।
 भूतादित्तु विकुञ्चयः सर्गे तन्मात्रिकं ततः ।
 ससर्गे शब्दतन्मात्रात् आकाशं शब्दलक्ष्यं ।
 शब्दमात्रं तदाकाशं भूतादिः स समावृणोत् ।
 आकाशस्तु विकुञ्चयः स्पर्शमात्रं ससर्गे ह ।
 बलवान् अभवत् वायुः तस्य स्पर्शो गुणो मत्तः । (विष्णुपुराण)

II. A famous passage in *Parásara* takes another view of the genesis and structure of the *Tanmātras* and the *Bhúta-Paramānus*. *Krishnapáda*, in the *तत्त्वत्रयविवरण*, represents the scheme as follows :—

The *Tanmātras* originate from one another in one

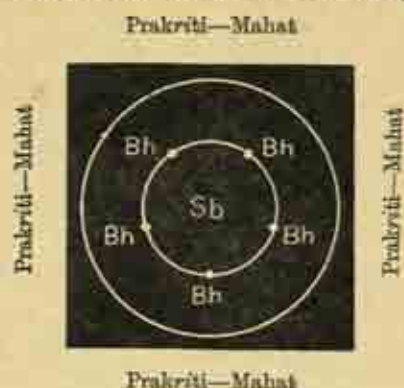
linear series, and each Bhúta originates in a separate line from its own Tanmátra :—

भूतादि	Bhútádi.
शब्दतन्मात्र	Sound-Tanmátra—as a radicle or centre surrounded or encircled by Bhútádi generates Ákása—
स्पर्शतन्मात्र	Touch-Tanmátra—as a radicle or centre encircled by sound-Tanmátra with Ákása-atom as a help generates Váyu—
रूपतन्मात्र	Colour-Tanmátra—as a radicle or centre encircled by touch-Tanmátra with Váyu-atom as a help generates Tejas—
रसतन्मात्र	Taste-Tanmátra—as a radicle or centre encircled by colour-Tanmátra with Tejas-atom as a help generates Ap—
गन्धतन्मात्र	Smell-Tanmátra—as a radicle or centre encircled by taste-Tanmátra with Ap-atom as a help generates Prithivi.

The genesis of a Bhúta-Paramánu (atom) from the subtile matter of a Tanmátra is not here so simple as in the view of the Vishnu Purána. The latter speaks of condensation and collocation, but in the passage under reference a Tanmátra is supposed to act as a radicle, as the centre of a system, surrounded or

encircled by Tanmātras of the immediately higher order in the medium of their own Bhūta.

Thus an atom of Ākāśa has the following structure :—

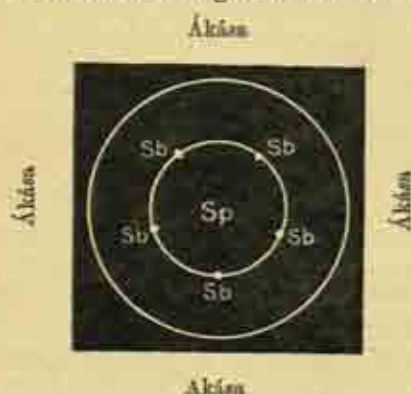


AN ATOM OF ĀKĀŚA.

Sb = Śabda-Tanmātra (vibration-potential).

Bh = Bhūtādi.

An atom of Vāyu is constituted as follows (this takes place within the surrounding medium of Ākāśa) :—

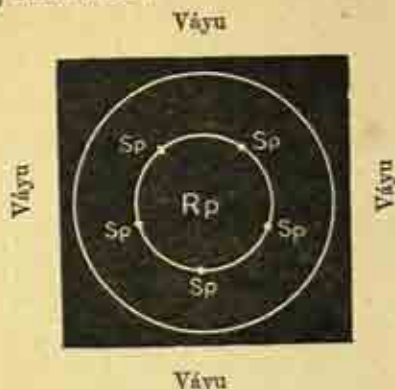


AN ATOM OF VĀYU.

Sp = Sparśa-Tanmātra (impact-potential).

Sb = Śabda-Tanmātra (vibration-potential).

An atom of Tejas (heat-and-light corpuscle) has the following structure :—



AN ATOM OF TEJAS.

Rp = Rūpa-Tanmātra (light-potential).

Sp = Sparsa-Tanmātra (impact-potential).

and so on.

A chemist will be disposed to push his chemical processes into the region of subtile matter. He may translate आवरण as a menstruum, and महायक as a catalytic agent. In this case an atom of Váyu will be considered as generated from the impact-Tanmātra as a radicle, in the menstruum of vibration-Tanmātra, with Ākāśa-atoms as a catalytic agent.

अथर्व क्रमः—भूतादेः शब्दतन्मात्रं जायते, शब्दतन्मात्रं भूतादिरापृणोति, तत आकाशं जायते, ततः अस्मात् शब्दतन्मात्रात् स्पर्शतन्मात्रं जायते, स्पर्शतन्मात्रं शब्दतन्मात्रमापृणोति, एवं शब्दतन्मात्रावृतात् आकाशसहायकात् स्पर्शतन्मात्रात् वायुर्जायते, ततः अस्मात् स्पर्शतन्मात्रात् रूपतन्मात्रं जायते, रूपतन्मात्रं स्पर्शतन्मात्रमापृणोति, एवं स्पर्शतन्मात्रावृतात् वायुसहायकात् रूपतन्मात्रात् तेजो जायते—and so on. सर्वं क्रमः तत्त्वत्रयविवरणे कृष्णपादैरुक्तः । परपरमुनि, तत्त्वत्रयभाष्य (चचित्राकरण) ।

A slight variation of the above view is ascribed to a certain school of Vedāntists in the तत्त्वनिरूपण.

The scheme may be represented as follows :—

A Bhūta-atom is evolved by integration (condensation and collocation, *सूत्रावस्थाप*) from the corresponding Tanmātra (subtile matter). This is the same view as that of the Vishnu Purāṇa.

The Tanmātras again evolve from one another in a lineal series, as in Parāśara's view. But the process of this generation is somewhat more complex. A Tanmātra first disintegrates and emanates in a surrounding medium (a menstruum) of the Tanmātra just preceding it in the order of genesis, and, with the help of its own Sthūla Bhūta as a sort of catalytic, generates the Tanmātra next in order; *e.g.*, the infra-atomic impact-particles (*स्पर्शतन्मात्र*) disintegrate or emanate, in a surrounding "atmosphere" of the vibratory subtile matter (*शब्दतन्मात्र*), and then, with the help of their own atomic integration Vāyu, gas, generate the Tanmātra next in order, the subtile matter of radiant light-and-heat (*तेजः*).

III. Patañjali's view, as expounded in the *वासनाश* and *योगवार्त्तिक*, is as follows :—

(a) The order of genesis of various forms of subtile matter (potentials) :—

- (1) Bhūtādi, the rudiment-matter, original Mass, acted on by Rajas (Energy) produces the sound-potential (vibration-potential), *अन्यान्याभ्याम् सहकाराभ्यां स्वकार्यजनने राजसाहङ्कारः सहकारीभवति ।*
- (2) This subtile vibration-potential, as a radicle, with accretion of rudiment-matter (Bhūtādi), condensing and collocating, and acted on by Rajas, generates the subtile touch-potential

(impact-potential), which is impingent as well as vibratory (oscillating).

- (3) This subtile impact-potential, again, as a radicle, with accretion of rudiment-matter (Bhútádi), condensing and collocating, and acted on by Rajas, generates the subtile light-and-heat potential (रूपतन्मात्र) which radiates light and heat, in addition to being impingent and vibratory.
- (4) Next, the light-and-heat potential, as a radicle, with accretion of rudiment-matter (Bhútádi), condensing and collocating as before, generates the subtile taste-potential, which is charged with the potential of the taste-energy and of viscous attraction, in addition to being vibratory, impingent, and radiant.
- (5) Lastly, the subtile taste-potential as a radicle, with accretion of rudiment-matter as before, condensing and collocating, generates the subtile smell-potential, which is charged with the potential of the smell-energy, and also of cohesive attraction, in addition to being vibratory, impingent, and radiant.

(b) The order of genesis of the Bhúta-Paramáñus (forms of atomic matter).

The five classes of atoms are generated as follows :—

- (1) The sound-potential, subtile matter, with accretion of rudiment-matter (Bhútádi), generates the Ákása-atom.
- (2) The touch-potentials combine with the vibratory particles (sound-potential) to generate the Váyu-atom.

- (3) The light-and-heat potentials combine with touch-potentials and sound-potentials (*i.e.* with impact particles and vibratory particles) to produce the Tejas-atom.
- (4) The taste-potentials combine with light-and-heat potentials, touch-potentials, and sound-potentials (*i.e.* with radiant, impingent, and vibratory particles) to generate the Ap-atom; and
- (5) The smell-potentials combine with the preceding potentials (*i.e.* with particles of taste-energy and with radiant, impingent, and vibratory particles) to generate the Earth-atom.

The Ákāsa-atom possesses penetrability, the Vāyu-atom impact or mechanical pressure, the Tejas-atom radiant heat-and-light, the Ap-atom viscons attraction, and the Earth-atom cohesive attraction.

Vijñāna-bhikshu in one passage gives the following scheme of the genesis of the Bhūtas :—

A radicle of sound-potential with rudiment-matter gives Ákāsa-atom (Bhūtādi), a radicle of touch-potential with Ákāsa-atom gives Vāyu-atom, a radicle of light-and-heat potential with Vāyu-atom gives Tejas-atom, a radicle of taste-potential with Tejas-atom gives Ap-atom, and a radicle of smell-potential with Ap-atom gives Earth-atom. On this view, an atom

of Ákāsa = Bh(Sb)

of Vāyu = { Bh(Sb) } (Sp)

of Tejas = { Bh(Sb) } (Sp) Rp

where Bh = भूतादि, Sb = शब्दतन्मात्र, Sp = स्पर्शतन्मात्र, Rp = रूपतन्मात्र, and so on.

Bhútas and Paramánu—Cosmo-genesis and its successive stages :—

The "five Bhútas" stand for a classification of substances on the basis of their generic properties, resulting, as the Sāṅkhyas hold, from the structural type of their constituent atoms—a classification more physical than chemical, or properly speaking chemico-physical, unlike the purely chemical classification of the so-called elements of modern chemistry. A Paramánu, again, is a type of atoms corresponding to each Bhúta class, and indeed one and the same kind of Paramánu may comprehend atoms of different masses, if only these should agree in their structural type.

Cosmo-genesis: a Bird's-eye View.—Out of the all-pervasive rudiment-matter (Bhútádi) appeared Ákása (ether), first as a Tanmátra (subtile matter) charged with the potential energy of sound (vibration-potential), and then as an atomic integration of a mono-Tanmátric structure (the Ákása-atom—*आकाशाणु*) also ubiquitous and all-enveloping. In the next stage we find a new kind of Tanmátras, systems of the infra-atomic vibratory particles, so arranged as to manifest a new form of Energy, that of impact or mechanical pressure, and these Tanmátras (*स्पर्शतन्मात्राणि*) combining with the vibration-potentials (Ákása-Tanmátra) produced a new kind of atom, the di-Tanmátric Váyu-atom, which by aggregation formed a gaseous envelope composed of impinging (driving) vibratory particles (Váyu). Next appeared the third class of Tanmátras, infra-atomic systems of the impinging vibratory particles, which by their collocation developed a new form of Energy—the energy

of radiant heat-and-light. These Tanmātras (रूपतन्मात्राणि) combining with the potentials (Tanmātras) of vibration and impact, produced a new kind of atom—the tri-Tanmātric Tejas-atom, the light-and-heat corpuscle, which by aggregation enveloped the gaseous world in huge flames. In the next stage we have the fourth class of Tanmātras, new and complex infra-atomic systems of the radiant impinging vibratory particles, which evolved the energy of viscous attraction, as well as the potential energy concerned in the taste-stimulus. These Tanmātras (रसतन्मात्राणि) combining with the three previous ones, gave rise to another class of atoms, the tetra-Tanmātric Ap-atom, and the flaming gases were thus precipitated into cosmic masses of viscous fluid matters (Ap). Finally appeared the fifth class of Tanmātras, infra-atomic systems of the viscous radiant impinging vibratory particles which developed new forms of Energy—the energy of cohesive attraction, as well as the potential energy concerned in the stimulus of smell. These Tanmātras (गन्धतन्मात्राणि) uniting with the other four kinds of infra-atomic subtile particles, formed another class of atoms, the penta-Tanmātric Earth-atom. Thus the viscous fluid matters were condensed and transformed into the Earth-Bhūta, comprising the majority of the so-called elements of chemistry.

The Purānas, in their own fanciful way, conceive that, in the course of cosmic evolution, each succeeding Bhūta appeared within an outer envelope of its immediate predecessor, with a total mass (or volume?) a tenth less than that of the latter.

चिद्यत् तच्चाप्येकदेशगतो वायुः प्रकल्पितः ।
 चिन्तयेत् बहिर्मध्येषु मरुतो न्यूनवर्त्तिनः ॥
 ब्रह्माग्नावरणेष्वेषा न्यूनाधिक-विचारणा ।
 वायोर्दशशतो न्यूनो बहिर्वैषी प्रकल्पितः ॥
 पुराणोक्तं तारतम्यं दशशिभृतपञ्चके ॥

(पञ्चदशी-भूतचिक्के, Ślokas 72, 81, and 82.)

Examples of the different Bhútas :—

1. *Ákāsa*. This is ubiquitous.
2. *Váyu*. Various substances composed of di-Tanmátric atoms—kinds of *Váyu*—must have been formed in the gaseous envelope, in the second stage of cosmic evolution, out of the proto-atoms of *Ákāsa*; but they have either suffered a fresh transformation into substances of a more complex atomic structure, or have dissipated into the mono-Tanmátric *Ákāsa*, out of which they took their rise. The one familiar example now surviving is atmospheric air. Water-vapour (वाष्प) is but water (Ap), and smoke, fumes, etc., but earth-particles in gaseous diffusion.
3. *Tejas*. Various classes of *Tejas*-corpuscles—substances with tri-Tanmátric atomic structure, i.e. two grades subtler than the ordinary elements of chemistry (which are of a penta-Tanmátric structure)—are even now known (तेजो भीमादिभेदेन बहुविधे । भीमं दिव्यं सौंदर्यं साकरजं—वरचरानुनि, तल्लव्यभाष्य).

First, there is fire, or the light and heat emitted by the burning log of wood or lamp (अग्निः-दीपः-भीमं तेजः).

Now it is important to note that the flame of a burning log of wood (इन्धन) or of an oil-lamp is not pure Tejas, a pure mass of light-and-heat corpuscles. There is chemical union with Earth-particles (particles of the hard penta-Tanmátríc substance) acted on by Energy; and then the Tejas-corpuscles, light-and-heat particles which are latent (absorbed) therein, come forth as flame (पार्थिवोपहम्नेन तदनुगतात् तेजसः अग्निर्भवति—विज्ञानभिषु, प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 110, Chap. V.). Then there is the light of the sun and the stars (दिव्यं सौरं ज्वादिवादि) which are flaming masses of molten viscous matters (जलमाधेन्यनं तेजः दिव्यं तच्च सूर्योदि—तत्त्वत्रयभाष्य, अचित्प्रकरणं) or of molten earthy matters (सूर्योदीनि सङ्गीणि तेजांसि पार्थिवद्रव्यसङ्गेनेव अवस्थितानि—विज्ञानभिषु, प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 13, Chap. III.). There is also the lightning, which liberates a kind of Tejas latent in the aqueous particles and vapours, under the action of Energy, in the same way as an ordinary fire liberates the Tejas latent in the wood or other fuel. Next there are the stores of animal heat derived from the break-up of the nutritive material (जीर्णं). Lastly there comes the peculiar form of the Tejas Energy (radiant Energy) stored up in the metalliferous ores and igneous rocks which have been formed in the subterranean heat. Here earthy matters are mixed up, but the radiant Energy predominates in the composition of the metals (तेजसाधिक्येन तैजसादिता सुवर्णोदीना—विज्ञानभिषु, प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 19, Chap. III.). Aniruddha, a late Sāṅkhya commentator, notes in reference to "igneous bodies" that the greater part of their mass is derived from the Earth Bhúta, though the Tejas particles determine the peculiar chemical combination which produces them; and this must also be his view

of the composition of the metals (तत्र अपि तैजसे शरीरे अपि) बहुतरपार्थिवायमवावृत्तमकृतं, अत्यन्ते चानुपभोगात्—अनिरुद्धवृत्तिः, Sutra 112, Chap. V.).

4. Ap. This viscous fluid of a tetra-Tanmátric structure has but one pure example, viz., water, though the various organic acids, the juices of fruits and the saps of plants, are supposed to be transformations of watery radicles combined with different kinds of earthy accretions.
5. Lastly, the Earth Bhúta, the hard full-formed matter, with its penta-Tanmátric atoms, comprises by far the majority of the so-called chemical elements.

The question is,—how does one and the same Bhúta, of the same formal structure, comprise different kinds of elements, with different atomic masses and different characteristic properties? And the answer is not far to seek. The properties of a thing are only the energies that are manifested in the particular collocations of the three Gunas—Mass, Energy, and Essence; and a tri-Tanmátric or a penta-Tanmátric atom, i.e. an atom composed of three or five kinds of Tanmátras, may differ from another of the same class in respect of the number of constituent Tanmátras of any particular kind, as also of their collocation or grouping, and therefore in mass as well as in generic and specific characters.

The Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala conceives the properties (or energies) of substances to result from the grouping or the quanta of the Tanmátras, or the Gunas themselves,

and hence any radical differences in substances of the same Bhúta class must characterise their atoms, though in an infra-sensible form. In the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, on the other hand, the atoms of the same Bhúta class are alike in themselves, homogeneous; and the variety of substances comprehended under the same Bhúta is ascribed merely to the different arrangements or groupings of the atoms (बूट) and not of their components, for components they have none.

As a typical and familiar instance of the variety of characteristic properties (or energies) that may result from variations in accompaniment or grouping, the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala points to the various kinds of fruit acids and juices, all originating from one and the same Bhúta (water) with different accretions of earthy matters (भूविकाराः). In the same way, though we speak of only five classes of Tanmātras and atoms, the infinite variety of the world results from the infinitely varied collocations of the three original Gunas which underlie Tanmātra and atom alike. (सत्त्वरजस्तमसो अपकर्षकाहापवः संघातः परमाणुरिति—न्यायवार्तिक, उद्धोतकर, reporting the Sāṅkhya view. अयुतसिद्धावयवः संघातः परमाणुरिति—व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 44, Pada III. परमाणुः सामान्यविशेषात्मा अयुतसिद्धावयवभेदानुगतः सनुदायः—व्यासभाष्य, Sutra 44, Pada IV. योग्यतावच्छिन्ना धर्मिनः शक्तिरेव धर्मः—*ibid.*, Sutra 14, Pada III. यो धर्मेण अनुपातो सामान्यविशेषात्मा सोऽन्ययो धर्मो—*ibid.*, Sutra 14, Pada III.)

स्पादेतत्—कथं एकरूपाणां गुणानां अनेकरूपा प्रवृत्तिः—इत्यत आह परिणामतः सलिलवत् । यथा वारिद्विदुर्कं उदर्कं एकरसं अपि तत्सहृविकारान् आसाद्य नारिकेल-ताली-विल्व-चिरविल्व-त्रिन्दुकामलक-कपित्थ-फलरसतया परिणामात् मधुराह्लवणतिक्तकटुकपापहाया विकल्पते, एवमेकैकगुणसम्भवात्

प्रधानं गुणं चाश्रित्य सप्रधानगुणाः परिणामभेदान् प्रवर्त्तयन्ति । तदिदमुक्तं
प्रतिप्रतिगुणाश्रयविशेषात्, एकैकगुणाश्रयेण यो विशेषस्तस्मात् इत्यर्थः ।

(वाचस्पति—कौमुदी—on Kārika 16.)

If we take a unit of rudiment-matter (Bhūtādi) for the unit of mass (*cf.* the mass of an electron with a charge of motion, etc.), and represent the first Tanmātra by t_1 such units, and if further t_2, t_3, t_4, t_5 units of mass (Bhūtādi) be successively added at each accretion to form a fresh Tanmātra, then the second, third, fourth, and fifth Tanmātras will respectively contain $t_1 + t_2, t_1 + t_2 + t_3, t_1 + t_2 + t_3 + t_4,$ and $t_1 + t_2 + t_3 + t_4 + t_5$ units of mass.

Also the Vāyu-atom (bi-Tanmātric system) will contain $t_1 + (t_1 + t_2),$ i.e. $2t_1 + t_2$ units of mass; the Tejas-atom (tri-Tanmātric system) will contain $t_1 + (t_1 + t_2) + (t_1 + t_2 + t_3),$ i.e. $3t_1 + 2t_2 + t_3$ units; the Ap-atom (tetra-Tanmātric system) $t_1 + (t_1 + t_2) + (t_1 + t_2 + t_3) + (t_1 + t_2 + t_3 + t_4),$ i.e. $4t_1 + 3t_2 + 2t_3 + t_4$ units; and the Earth-atom (penta-Tanmātric system) $t_1 + (t_1 + t_2) + \dots + (t_1 + t_2 + t_3 + t_4 + t_5),$ i.e. $5t_1 + 4t_2 + 3t_3 + 2t_4 + t_5$ units.

If t units of mass be added to the first Tanmātra to form the atom of Ākāśa, the latter will contain $t_1 + t$ units of mass.

In other words, the numbers representing the mass-units (Tamas) in the different classes of atoms (gross matter) will form an ascending series, viz. $t_1 + t, 2t_1 + t_2, 3t_1 + 2t_2 + t_3, 4t_1 + 3t_2 + 2t_3 + t_4,$ and $5t_1 + 4t_2 + 3t_3 + 2t_4 + t_5.$

Now if a follower of the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala were

asked to account for differences among Paramānus of the same Bhūta class, he would perhaps suppose t_1 to vary from α_1 to β_1 , t_2 from α_2 to β_2 , t_3 from α_3 to β_3 , t_4 from α_4 to β_4 , and t_5 from α_5 to β_5 .

Therefore the mass-units contained in the Vāyu-atoms of the different possible Vāyu substances would be represented by $2\alpha_1 + t$, $2\alpha_1 + 1 + t$, $2\alpha_1 + 2 + t$, $2\beta_1 + t$, in A. P. with unity as common difference, there being $2(\beta_1 - \alpha_1) + 1$ possible Vāyu substances.

The mass-units contained in the Tejas-atoms of the different possible Tejas substances would be represented by the series $3\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_1 + \alpha_3$, $3\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + 1$, $3\beta_1 + 2\beta_2 + \beta_3$, increasing in A. P. by unity as common difference, there being $3(\beta_1 - \alpha_1) + 2(\beta_2 - \alpha_2) + (\beta_3 - \alpha_3) + 1$ Tejas substances possible.

The mass-units contained in the Ap-atoms of the different possible Ap substances would form the series $4\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4$, $4\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 + 1$, $4\beta_1 + 3\beta_2 + 2\beta_3 + \beta_4$, there being $4(\beta_1 - \alpha_1) + 3(\beta_2 - \alpha_2) + 2(\beta_3 - \alpha_3) + (\beta_4 - \alpha_4) + 1$ Ap substances possible.

The mass-units contained in the Earth-atoms of the different possible Earth substances would form the series in A. P., $5\alpha_1 + 4\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 + \alpha_5$, $5\alpha_1 + 4\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 + \alpha_5 + 1$, $5\beta_1 + 4\beta_2 + 3\beta_3 + 2\beta_4 + \beta_5$, there being $5(\beta_1 - \alpha_1) + 4(\beta_2 - \alpha_2) + 3(\beta_3 - \alpha_3) + 2(\beta_4 - \alpha_4) + (\beta_5 - \alpha_5) + 1$ Earth substances possible.

Size (परिमाण).—As to size or volume, the Sāṅkhya accepts only two kinds—the infinitesimal, which is also without parts (अणु—निरवयव), and the non-infinitesimal, which consists of parts (महत्—सावयव). The latter varies from the excessively small (the so-called Anus, Tan-

mátras, and Paramánuś) to the indefinitely great (परममहत्—विभु,—e.g. Ākāśa).

The Gunas alone are infinitesimal, with the exception of those ubiquitous ones that evolve into Ākāśa-atoms and Mind-stuff (चाकाशाश्च, and चित्तःकरण); all the rest of the evolved products (whether subtile or gross matter) are non-infinitesimal.

Vijñāna-bhikṣhu notes that all the Gunas (Reals) cannot be ubiquitous. If this were the case, that disturbance of equilibrium, that unequal aggregation with unequal stress and strain with which cosmic evolution begins, would be impossible. The Gunas, which give rise to Ākāśa and Mind-stuff, must be held to be ubiquitous, and this will suffice for the ubiquity of Prakṛiti. (न च चक्षुर्दृष्टेने गुणास्त्वप्रकृतेः विभुत्वेनैवावगम्यते इति वाच्यम् । चित्तःकरणाकाशाहेतुगुणानां विभुत्वेन तदुपपत्तेः । सर्वगुणानां विभुत्वे सति चाद्यपरिणामहेतुजोभिसंयोगाद्यवभवत्—योगवाङ्मिक, Sutra 51, Pada III.)

Chemical Analysis and Synthesis—Elements and Compounds.—What, then, is the equivalent in the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala of the distinction between a chemical element and a chemical compound, or is there none? Did or did not this physical analysis and classification of things lead on to a classification based on chemical analysis and chemical synthesis? These are questions of singular interest, the answer to which will disclose some new points of view from which the ancient Hindu thinkers approached the problems.

Aggregates (समूहाः) may, in regard to their structure, be divided into two classes: (1) those of which the

parts are in intimate union and fusion, being lost in the whole (अयुतसिद्धावयवाः समूहाः), and (2) mechanical aggregates, or collocations of distinct and independent parts (युतसिद्धावयवाः समूहाः).

A substance is an aggregate of the former kind, and may be divided into two classes: (1) the Bhūtas and their "isomeric" modifications (भूत, भूतभेद, and भूतविकार), and (2) chemical compounds (मिलितद्रव्य, संहतभूताद्यै). Chemical compounds, again, may be subdivided into two classes: (1) those composed of atoms of the same Bhūta class, i.e. of different isomeric modifications of the same Bhūta, and (2) those composed of atoms of different Bhūta classes. In the first case, there is contact between "isomeric" atoms (सजातीय-संयोग), in the second case between heterogeneous atoms (विजातीय-संयोग). The first contact leads to intimate union (सङ्गः,—सङ्गाद्यः यः संयोगविशेषः तेनैव द्रव्याणां विकारो भवति—विज्ञानभिद्यु, प्रवचनभाष्य): the isomeric atoms by a peculiar liberation of Energy (सजातीयोपहन्म—the action of similars on similars) are attracted towards one another, and being riveted, as it were, form the so-called material cause (उपादानकारण) of the compound product. The second kind of contact (that between unlike atoms of heterogeneous Bhūtas) begins with a liberation of Energy (उपहन्म), which breaks up each of the Bhūtas; and taking particles (or atoms) of one as nuclei or radicles, groups particles of the rest round these radicles in a comparatively free or unattached condition. In this case, one Bhūta, that which serves to furnish the radicles, not necessarily that which is numerically or quantitatively predominant, gets the name of material

cause (उपादानकारण), and the others, which by their collocation cause the liberation of Energy (उपहम्भ, अवहम्भ, or विहम्भ), are called efficient causes (निमित्तकारण)—(एवमेकैकगुणसम्भवात् प्रधानगुणं साधित्य अप्रधानगुणाः परिणामभेदान् प्रवर्तयन्ति—वाचस्पति, कौमुदी on Kārikā 16). The illustrations given (viz. the Rasas as modifications of Ap, water, with Earth-accretions) show that this process applies not only to the Gunas, but also to the Bhūtas. (यथा आकाशादेकरसं सलिलं पतितं नानारूपात् संश्लेषात् भिद्यते—गीडपाद on Kārikā 17. तच्च अपि (तेजसे शरीरे अपि) बहुतरपाधिवायव्या-वह्मनात्, अत्यन्ते च अनुपभोगात्—अनिरुद्ध on Sutra 112, Chap. V. जातिसाङ्ख्यस्य अस्माकमदोषत्वात् सामग्र्योपपत्तये अनेकैरपि इन्द्रियैः एकदा एकवृत्तुतपादने बाधकं नास्ति ।—विज्ञानभिषु, प्रवचनभाष्य ।)

Aniruddha goes so far as to hold that both "isomeric" and "heterogenic" combinations are real cases of constitutive contact. (आरम्भकसंयोग, e.g. भौतिकवायोर्देहारम्भकत्वं—अनिरुद्ध on Sutra 113, Chap. V.). But in the later Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala the current teaching denied this—बहूनुपादानायोगात् (Sutra 102, Chap. V.), where विज्ञानभिषु notes—बहूनां भिन्नजातीयानां चोपादानत्वं न दृष्टमिति सजातीयमेवोपादानम् । इतरच्च भूतचतुष्टयमुपहम्भकम् ।

But besides these transformations of substance (द्रव्यानन्तर-परिणाम) by "isomeric" or "heterogenic" process, ceaseless changes go on in the characters, the modality, and the states of substances—changes which are due to the unequal distribution of force (or of stress and strain—pressure) among the Gunas, which are in themselves constant. (धर्मलक्षणावस्थापरिणामाः न द्रव्यानन्तरतः—यथा रेखा शतस्थाने शतं दशस्थाने दश, एकचैकस्थाने, यथा चैकत्वेऽपि स्त्री माता चोच्यते दुहिता च सखा चेति—गुणिनित्यत्वेऽपि गुणानां विमर्देऽपि च—आसभाष्य, Sutra 13, Pada III.)

"Even as the same figure '1' stands for a hundred in the place of hundred, for ten in the place of ten, and for a unit in the place of unit."

Now the question is—in these mixed substances does the fusion take place by Paramāṇus or by larger masses (or lumps)? Now a Paramāṇu is defined to be the smallest portion of any substance which exhibits the characteristic qualities of that substance; in other words, it stands for the smallest homogeneous portion of any substance. It is not without parts, and there-

This conclusively proves that the decimal notation was familiar to the Hindus when the Vyāsa-Bhāṣhya was written, i.e. centuries before the first appearance of the notation in the writings of the Arabs or the Greco-Syrian intermediaries. Vāchaspati, who comments on the Vyāsa-Bhāṣhya, composed his Nyāya-Sūtrī-Nibandha in वसुधैवकुतुम्भकः, i.e. Samvat 898 or 842 A.D. This cannot be Śaka 898, for apart from the decisive use of वसुधैव, which by this time had come to signify the Samvat era, Vāchaspati's commentator, Udayana, wrote the Lakṣaṇāvalī in Śaka 906—

नकोम्बरादुपनिषत्तन्त्रेण मन्त्रात्मनः ।

वसुधैवकुतुम्भकः सुबोधो लक्षणावली ॥

and Udayana, who wrote the Parisuddhi on the Tātparyyatīkā of Vāchaspati, could not have been a contemporary of the latter, as will also appear from the invocation to Sarasvatī in the opening lines of the Parisuddhi. Vāchaspati, then, preceded Udayana by 142 years, and must have been himself preceded by the author of the Vyāsa-Bhāṣhya by a longer interval still, for Vāchaspati ascribes the Bhāṣhya to Veda-Vyāsa himself (वेदव्यासेन भाषिते भाष्ये बाह्या विशाखने). The internal evidence also points to the conclusion that the Bhāṣhya cannot have been composed later than the sixth century—cf. the quotations from Pāṇchasaikha, Vārshaganya, and the Shashthi-Tantra-Sāstra, without a single reference to Isvara-Krishna—which is decisive. I may add that I remember to have come across passages of a similar import in Buddhist and other writings of a still earlier date.

fore not indivisible. It is subject to disintegration. In a Bhūta or its isomeric modification, the Paramānu, the smallest homogeneous component particle, is unmixed, and therefore corresponds to the atom of modern chemistry. In a mixed substance (मिलितद्रव्य, संहतभूताद्ये), whether it be an "isomeric" or a heterogenic compound, the qualities are due to the mixture, and therefore its Paramānu (usually called Arambhaka Paramānu), the smallest homogeneous particle possessing its characteristic qualities, must result from the mixture of the Paramānus (in smaller or larger numbers as the case may be) of the component substances. In the Sāṅkhya view, then, the Paramānu of a mixed substance (Arambhaka Paramānu) corresponds to what we now call molecule. (अपकर्षपर्यन्ते द्रव्यं परमाणुरिति—व्यासभाष्य । लोटस्य हि प्रविभज्यमानस्य यस्मिन्नवयवे अत्यन्ततारतम्यं व्यवतिष्ठते सः अपकर्षपर्यन्तपरमाणुः—वाचस्पति, तत्त्ववैशारदी—Sutra 52, Pada III. नाणुनित्यता न निर्भगत्वं । पृथिवीपरमाणुः जलपरमाणुरित्यादिव्यवहारस्तु पृथिव्यादीनां अपकर्षकात्ताभिप्रायेणैव ।—विज्ञानभिक्षु, प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 88, Chap. V.) That the Paramānus may form binary molecules (द्व्यणुक) in forming substances, is acknowledged by the Sāṅkhyas, as will appear from Gaudapāda: तथा अन्योन्याश्रयाच्च द्व्यणुकवत्गुणाः । (गौडपाद, on Kārikā 12). Even the Vaiśeṣhikas, with their prejudice against "poly-Bhautic" or "heterogenic" combination, acknowledge that in "poly-Bhautic" compounds the different Bhūta substances unite by their Paramānus (or atoms), though they rigidly insist that in such cases only one atom should be regarded as the "radicle" (उपादान or द्रव्यारम्भक कारण) and the others as co-efficient causes (निमित्तकारण—उपारम्भक, e.g. प्रज्ञस्तपाद—एवं समुत्पत्तेषु चतुर्षु महाभूतेषु महेश्वरस्या-

भिष्यानमात्रात् तैजसेभ्योऽग्न्यः पार्थिवपरमाणुसहितेभ्यो महदग्नमुत्पद्यते
(प्रशस्तपादभाष्य—where Sridhara notes पार्थिवा अवयवा उपहम्भकाः
and Udayana तैजसानां परमाणुनां पार्थिवाणुसहितेन अग्नस्य
हिरण्यवत्त्वं विवक्षितं).

It was only in the mediæval Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala that under the influence of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika doctrine a radical difference was conceived to exist between the structure (or constitution) of a molecule composed of "isomeric" atoms, and that of one composed of heterogeneous atoms. In the former case there was believed to take place intimate union (सङ्ग), in the latter case only a grouping of comparatively free or loosely attached atoms round a radicle atom (ग्रहण), with liberation of Energy (उपहम्भ, अवहम्भ, or विहम्भ) and the setting up of unequal stress and strain (गुणवैयर्थ्यविमर्श—ईश्वरकृष्ण). At the same time it was of course admitted that this distinction does not apply to the forms of subtile matter (Tanmātra—सूक्ष्मभूत) which could unite in intimate fusion, whether homogeneous or heterogeneous. For example, the subtile body (सूक्ष्मशरीर) which is supposed to be the seat or vehicle of the conscious principle is acknowledged by Vijñāna-bhikṣhu to be penta-Bhautic (पञ्चभूतात्मक); in other words, all the five Tanmātras serve as material causes, though the gross body (the animal organism) is stated to be only a "heterogenic" compound with the Earth Bhūta as radicle or base. (अधिष्ठानशरीरं च सूक्ष्मं पञ्चभूतात्मकं वक्ष्यते। तन्मात्रकार्यं यत् भूतपञ्चकं लिङ्गाधिष्ठानशरीरम्—प्रवचनभाष्य, Sūtras 11 and 12, Chap. III. सूक्ष्मशरीरं पार्थिवमेव ज्ञानानि च भूतानि उपहम्भकानि—*ibid.*, Sūtra 19, Chap. III.)

But in the original Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala it appears that the production of a new substance by mixture of unlike Bhūtas (विजातीयसंयोग) was conceded as freely as in the Vedānta, and was conceived as in nowise differing from the formation of a compound of atoms of the same Bhūta class. The Sāṅkhya analysis of all change into transformations of Energy due to collocations of unchanging Gunas, in other words the prevailing chemico-physical (or physical) point of view, naturally recognises no distinction between collocations of "isomeric" and those of heterogeneous atoms. At bottom they are all collocations of the Gunas. Even Vijñāna-bhikṣu, who, as one of the latest expounders of the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala, has been most affected by the Vaiśeṣhika prejudice against "poly-Bhautic" combination (विजातीयसंयोग), urges that the qualities of a compound substance are not necessarily the result of similar qualities in the component elements. (सजातीय-कारणगुणस्यैव कार्यगुणारम्भकता इति तु तेषां (तार्किकानां) अपि न नियमः ।) Elsewhere he explains that, so far from the vital activity being independent, it is originated and maintained by the combined operation or fusion of the different sensory and motor reflexes of the living organism, and notes that the united operation of mixed (or miscellaneous) causes, where there is a fit collocation of matter, offers no difficulty to a follower of the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala. (जातिमाह्वयस्य जस्माकमदोषत्वात्, सामयोरसमवधाने सति जनेकैरपि इन्द्रियैः एकदा एकवृत्त्युत्पादने बाधकं नास्ति—प्रवचनभाष्य, Sutra 32, Chap. II.) In the middle of the ninth century we find Vāchaspati instancing some "heterogenic" or "poly-Bhautic" compositions as typical examples of evolutionary change

(परिणाम) and unhesitatingly accepting the substantive character of the products. In the Kaumudi he describes the various acids and juices of fruits as modifications of the same original water in the presence of different kinds of earthy accretions. The process is peculiar. The water-particle (or atom) serves as a radicle or centre of a system, and the different kinds of the Earth-Bhūta centering round this as a nucleus become the seat of forces, which bring in the development of new energies (and new qualities, *e.g.* tastes) in the water. (यथा पारिदधिमुक्ते उदके एकरसमपि तत्तद्भूतविकारान् आसाद्य नारिकेल-ताली-वित्त-कोपित्यादि-रसतया परिणामात् मधुराम्लव्यातिरिक्तकटुकपापतया विकल्पते । इति एकैकगुणसम्भवात् प्रधानगुणे आश्रित्य सप्रधानगुणाः परिणामभेदान् प्रवर्त्तयन्ति ।—कौमुदी on Kārikā 16.) Vāchaspati also points out that different substances may be transformed into one and the same substance (*e.g.* the production of salt by the cow, the horse, the buffalo, and the elephant, thrown into the salt-factory of Sambara in Rajputana, or of the flame of a candle by the combination of wick, oil, and fire). (परिणामैकत्वं बहुनामपि एकः परिणामः दृष्टः । तद्वयथा गवाश्च-महिषमातङ्गानां रुमानिधिप्रानां एकलवणत्वजातीयलवणः परिणामः, चर्चितैलानलानां च प्रदीप इति ।—तत्त्ववैशारदी on व्यासभाष्य, Pada IV., Sutra 14.)

Earlier still, *i.e.* not later than the sixth century, the Vyāsa-Bhāṣhya, noting that inorganic matter, vegetable substances, and animal substances do not differ from one another essentially in respect of their potential energies and ultimate constituents, points out that various bi-Bhautic chemical compounds of water and earth substances, in the shape of saps, acids, and juices, are found in plants in their different parts

(जलभूम्योः पारिणामिकं रसादिवैद्यरूपं स्वाचरेषु दृष्टम्). In other words, bi-Bhautic compounds are here placed in the same category as compounds of substances of the same Bhúta class, for here the particles of both the Bhútas are regarded as forming the matter (material cause—उपादानकारण) of the smallest homogeneous portions of the compound substances.

N.B.—Váchaspati naturally interprets this to mean separate modifications of the two Bhútas.

The view of the earlier Sāṅkhyas, that atoms of different Bhútas may chemically combine to form molecules of compound substances as much as atoms of different modes of the same Bhúta, comes out clearly in Utpala's brief reference to the Sāṅkhya system in his commentary on Varāhamihira's *Vṛihat Samhitā*. (रभ्यः पञ्चभ्यः [तन्माषेभ्यः] पञ्चमहाभूतानि भवन्ति । तेभ्यः शरीरेषां शरीराणि । यतः पञ्चमहाभूतमयानि शरीराणि—Utpala, Chap. I, Śloka 7.)

CHEMISTRY IN THE MEDICAL SCHOOLS OF ANCIENT INDIA.

As a matter of fact, long before the fifth century, probably as early as the first century A.D., the prevailing schools of medicine and surgery which were based on the Sāṅkhya teaching with a methodology derived from the Nyāya-Vaisesika doctrine (*cf.* Charaka, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. I.; Vimānasthāna, Chap. VIII.; also Susruta, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. I.) had founded an elaborate theory of inorganic and organic compounds, which equally admitted iso-Bhautic and hetero-Bhautic com-

binations. Like the Vedāntists, Charaka held that each of the gross Bhútas (Mahábhútas) is a peculiar ultra-chemical compound of five original subtile Bhútas. In this sense, every substance is penta-Bhautic, but for purposes of chemical analysis and synthesis, *i.e.* considered with reference to the Mahábhútas, all substances in their chemical constitution belong to one or other of the following classes: mono-Bhautic, bi-Bhautic, tri-Bhautic, tetra-Bhautic, and penta-Bhautic. Compounds of different Bhútas, again, may combine to form more complex substances, and these in their turn higher compounds still, and so on in progressive transformation, as is more specially the case with organic substances and products.

Physical Characters of the Bhútas.—The prevailing physical characters of the different Bhútas and their isomeric modes are enumerated as follows:—

Earth substances: Heavy, rough, hard, inert, dense, opaque, exciting the sense of smell.

Ap substances: Liquid, viscous, cold, soft, slippery, fluid, exciting the sense of taste.

Tejas substances: Hot, penetrative, subtile, light, dry, clear, rarefied, and luminous.

Váyu substances: Light, cold, dry, transparent, rarefied, impingent.

Ákása substances: Imponderable (or light), rarefied, elastic, capable of sound (vibrations).

गुरुत्वरजठिनमन्दस्थिराविषदसान्द्र-स्थूल गन्धगुणबहुलानि पाषाणानि । द्रव-
सिग्धशीतमन्दमृदुपिच्छिलसररसगुणबहुलानि आप्यानि । उष्णतीक्ष्णमृक्षल-
घुर्णविषदरूपगुणबहुलानि आग्नेयानि । लघुशीतकृच्छराविषद मृक्षस्पर्शगुण-
बहुलानि वायव्यानि । मृदुलघुमृक्षस्पर्शशून्यगुणबहुलानि आकाशात्मकानि ।—
Charaka, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. XXVI ; compare Susruta,
Sūtrasthāna, Chap. XLI.

Charaka points out that the primary qualities or specific physical characters of the five Bhūtas are tactile qualities, *i.e.* sensible to touch, *e.g.* hardness (or roughness) for Earth, liquidity (or yielding to pressure) for Ap, impelling or moving force (pressure) for Vāyu, heat for Tejas, and vacuum (non-resistance, penetrability) for Ākāśa.

खरद्रवचलोष्णत्वं भूतलानिलतेजसाम् ,
आकाशस्याप्रतीयातो दृष्टं लिङ्गं यथाक्रमम् ।
लघ्वणं सङ्घर्मेवैतत् स्पर्शनेन्द्रियगोचरः ।

(Charaka, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. I.)

(*Cf.* the elaborate enumeration of physical characters quoted in Vijñāna-bhikṣhu, Yoga-Vārtika, Sūtra 42, Pada I ; also Varavara's commentary on Tattva-traya, Achit-prakarana.)

The Mahābhūtas—Mechanical Mixtures.—Susruta notes that each of the gross Bhūtas (Mahābhūtas) is found mixed up with the other Bhūtas—*e.g.*, the Mahābhūta Ākāśa is the receptacle (or vehicle) of air, heat-and-light, and water vapour ; the Mahābhūta Vāyu, of water vapour, light-and-heat, and even fine particles of earth held in suspension ; the Mahābhūta Tejas, of earth particles in the shape of smoke, and also water vapour. (अन्योऽन्यानुप्रविशानि सञ्चोन्वेतानि निर्दिशेत्—Susruta, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. I. अन्ये पुनः अन्यथा व्याचक्षते । आकाशे

पवन-दहन-तोषानि । वायौ तेजोऽम्बुनी भूरपि खलुतापिशेषेण । भूमिरपि
धूमादिरूपेण तेजसि । तेजोद्रव्ये पानीयमपि ।—Dalvana on Susruta,
loc. cit.)

Mono-Bhautic Earth substances :—Charaka and Susruta regard the following as Earth substances : gold, the five Lohas (silver, copper, lead, iron, and tin) and their “rust,” arsenic, orpiment, various mineral earths and salts, sand, precious stones. (Charaka, Sūtrasthāna, Chap. I; *cf.* also Susruta, Sūtrasthāna, Chap. I. पार्थिवः सुवर्णैरजतमणिमुक्तामनःशिलाभूतकपालादयः । सुवर्णस्य इह पार्थिवत्वमेवाङ्गीक्रियते गुरुत्वकाठिन्यस्यैव्यादिहेतुभिः । मृचे चादिग्रहणात् लोहमलमिक्तामुपाहरितालवणगैरिकरसाञ्जनप्रभृतीनां—Dalvana on Susruta, *loc. cit.*)

The salts include common salt, saltpetre, etc. Susruta mentions the alkalis, borax, natron, Yavakshāra (carbonate of potash), etc. The Audbhida salt, an inflorescence of the soil, stands for *reh* (चौद्रिदं पौञ्जलवर्णं यज्ज्ञातं भूमितः स्वयम्).

Of these Earth substances some were known to be compounds, *e.g.* the chemical salts of the metals, collyrium, etc. Susruta describes the preparation of the metallic salts. The leaves of the metals were pasted over with the salts, and then roasted (अपस्कृति, Chikitsāsthāna, Chap. X.). These metallic salts are therefore mono-Bhautic Earth compounds. Susruta also gives the preparation of mild and caustic alkalis (Sūtrasthāna, Chap. XI.).

Origin of precious stones.—Some hazarded the guess that the precious stones are rocks (or earths) metamorphosed by natural process in the course of ages (Varāhamihira—केचित् भुवः स्वभावात् वैचित्र्यं प्रादुरूपलानां । Utpala notes—रत्नरूपत्वं प्राप्ताः कालान्तरेण ।).

Ap substances, simple and compound :—

Susruta, following Charaka, enumerates various classes of Ap substances (द्रवद्रव्य) as follows: waters, acids, milks, curds, butters, oils (vegetable as well as animal), fats, honeys, molasses, alcoholic liquors, urines, etc.

Pure Ap (Mahābhūta) is tasteless, and the six tastes are developed when the Mahābhūta Ap enters into combination, mechanical or chemical, with other Mahābhūtas. Susruta notes that various kinds of Earths are dissolved in the waters of different localities, and where the particles so dissolved are predominantly earthy, the water tastes acid or salt; where predominantly watery, the resulting taste is sweet; where the Earth-particles are mixed up with Tejas, the water tastes pungent or bitter, etc. Such is the case with mechanical mixtures. In the case of bi-Bhautic or tri-Bhautic compounds Charaka mentions that substances with Mahābhūta Ap predominating in their composition taste sweet; with Mahābhūtas Earth and Tejas predominating, acid; with Mahābhūtas Ap and Tejas predominating, salt; with Mahābhūtas Vāyu and Tejas predominating, pungent; with Mahābhūtas Vāyu and Ākāśa predominating, bitter; and with Mahābhūtas Vāyu and Earth predominating, astringent. (Charaka, Sūtrasthāna, Chap. XXVI; cf. Susruta, Sūtrasthāna, Chap. XLII.)

In fact, with the exception of Susruta's waters, which are mechanical mixtures, or rather solutions, all these Ap substances are organic products, and, as such, penta-Bhautic, i.e. compounded of all the five Mahā-

bhūtas; and the particular "taste" which is developed depends on the relative proportion of the Mahābhūtas and the predominance of one or more of them in the penta-Bhautic compound in question.

Qualities of Compounds.—The isomeric modes of each Mahābhūta have specific colours, tastes, etc., due to their structure, i.e. the arrangement of their atoms, and the physico-chemical characters of compounds, whether of the same or of different Mahābhūtas, result from the collocation in unequal proportion of the different forces latent in the atoms of the component substances. Charaka adds that the varied forms (textures) and colours of organic substances, whether vegetable or animal, are derived in the same way. (एषमेतेषां रसानां यद्वन्मुपपन्नं नूनातिरेकविशेषात् महानूतानाम् । नूतानानिव स्वापरजद्वनानां नानावयवैक्यविशेषाः ।)

Susruta ignores Charaka's distinction between Mahābhūta and subtile Bhūta, and views every substance as in reality penta-Bhautic, and it is only the relative predominance of a particular Bhūta or Bhūtas in any substance that determines its class. (पृथिव्यग्नेयोवाय्वाकाशानां समुदायात् द्रव्याभिनिर्वृतिः । उत्कर्षस्तु चमिव्यञ्जको भवति इदं पाचिवं इदं चाप्यं इदं तेजसं इदं वायव्यं इदं आकाशीयमिति । —Susruta, Sūtrasthāna, Chap. XLI.)

The Extant Charaka and Susruta—Succession of Medical Authorities.—The extant Charaka and Susruta, the sources of our present information regarding the progress of scientific knowledge in the medical schools of ancient India, are both redactions of original authorities. The extant Charaka is a redaction by Dīdhabala of the genuine Charaka Samhitā, which was

itself a redaction by Charaka of the original work of Agnivesa, the disciple of Ātreya Punarvasu as distinguished from Kṛishnātreya and Bhikshu Ātreya, also well-known medical authorities. The extant Susruta is a redaction by Nāgārjuna of an original work (*Vṛiddha Susruta*) by Susruta, the disciple of Dhanvantari. That Charaka preceded Susruta is almost certain. Nāgārjuna was probably earlier than Dṛidhabala. At any rate, Dṛidhabala imported into Charaka much of the surgical knowledge which had till then been the traditional heritage of the Susruta school. And in the matter of the surgical treatment of certain diseases, the genuine Dṛidhabala is often as advanced as Susruta's redacteur himself. The latter was probably identical with the alchemist Nāgārjuna (Siddha Nāgārjuna), the metallurgist Nāgārjuna (author of a treatise on metallurgy, *Lohasāstra*), and the Buddhist Nāgārjuna, author of the *Mādhyamika-sūtravṛtti*. Charaka and Susruta continued to receive additions after Dṛidhabala and Nāgārjuna, and even after Vāgbhata, but the whole of the extant Charaka is probably much earlier than the commentator Chakrapāṇi, and the whole of the extant Susruta earlier than Dalvana, the commentator, and Mādhava, the author of *Rugvinischaya*. The extracts in Vāgbhata make it certain that the passages I have quoted or shall quote from the *Sūtrasthāna* and *Śārīrasthāna* of Charaka and Susruta cannot be later than the sixth century of the Christian era.

Preparation of Chemical Compounds.—The knowledge of chemical compounds and of their preparation

continued to make progress in the Charaka and Susruta schools. The great metallurgist, Patañjali, in his treatise on Metallurgy (लोहशास्त्र), gave elaborate directions for many metallurgic and chemical processes, especially the preparation of the metallic salts, alloys, and amalgams, and the extraction, purification, and assaying of metals. Probably it was Patañjali who discovered the use of the mixtures called Vidas, which contained aqua regia or other mineral acids *in potentia*. Unfortunately Patañjali's *magnum opus* appears to have been lost, but extracts from it are frequently found in mediæval works on Medicine and Rasáyana which leave no doubt as to its remarkable scientific value. The metallurgist Nágárjuna advanced the knowledge of chemical compounds by his preparations of mercury. The Harshacharita, in the seventh century, relates a fable concerning this Nágárjuna, and speaks of him as a friend and contemporary of Sátaváhana. The relative priority of Patañjali and Nágárjuna is a vexed question in the history of metallurgy. That Nágárjuna's Lohasástra was earlier than the final redaction of Patañjali will appear from the following circumstances:—(1) Chakradatta in his summary of Nágárjuna mentions that the chemical process of testing pure iron must be repeated twice before it can be regarded as decisive, whereas Śivadása Sen's extract from Patañjali shows that the latter directed the process to be repeated seven times; (2) Patañjali in the Abhraka-vidhi (mica operation) adds mercury, which in this particular operation is wanting in Nágárjuna's recipe (*cf.* Chakradatta, and Patañjali as reported in the Yogaratnákara-samuch-

chaya); and (3) Nágárjuna is quoted in the earlier compilations, Patañjali in the later.

Chemical Industries.—Early in the sixth century, Varáhamihira in the *Vrihat Samhitá* gives several preparations of cements or powders called Vajra-lepa, “cements strong as the thunderbolt”; and there was ample use for these in the temple architecture of the Buddhist period, the remains of which bear testimony to the adamant strength of these metal or rock cements. (प्रासादहर्म्यवलभोलिङ्गप्रतिमासु कुडनकूपेषु सनामो दातव्यो चर्मसहस्रायुतस्यायो । Chapter LVI., *ibid.*) Varáhamihira also alludes to the experts in machinery (यन्त्रविदः, यन्त्रज्ञाः) and the professional experts in the composition of dyes and cosmetics (रागमन्त्रमुक्तिविदः Ch. XVI., also Ch. XV.). I would also refer to the interesting chapter on Perfumery (Ch. LXXVI.) where Varáhamihira gives various recipes for artificial imitations of natural flower-scents, as of the essence of Vakula, Utpala, Champaka, Atimuktaka, etc., arranges compound scents in a sort of scale according to the proportions of certain ground essences used in their preparation, and determines by the mathematical calculus of combination (लोष्टकप्रसार) the number of variations of the different notes in this scale. To these classes of professional experts were due three of the great Indian discoveries in the chemical arts and manufactures which enabled India to command for more than a thousand years the markets of the East as well as the West and secured to her an easy and universally recognised pre-eminence among the nations of the world in manufactures and exports: (1) the preparation of fast dyes for textile fabrics by the treatment of

natural dyes like Mañjishthā with alum (गुचरो मंजिषा रागवन्धनी) and other chemicals (*e.g.* sulphate of iron) also cow-dung (*cf.* the "cow-dung substitute," Roscoe); (2) the extraction of the principle of indigotin from the indigo plant by a process which, however crude, is essentially an anticipation of modern chemical methods; and (3) the tempering of steel in a manner worthy of advanced metallurgy, a process to which the mediæval world owed its Damascus swords. It was this applied chemistry much more than handicraft skill which gave India her premier position in the Middle Ages and earlier (indeed from Pliny to Tavernier) in exports and manufactures; for in handicraft skill, as in design and workmanship, great as were her merits, India came to be surpassed by her disciples China and Japan.

The Vāsavadattā and the Dasakumāra Charita in the sixth century allude to the preparation of a mass of fixed or coagulated mercury (पारदपिण्डश्च कालपादुवादिनः—वासवदत्ता); a chemical powder, the inhalation of which would bring on deep sleep or stupor (योगचूर्णे—दशकुमारचरित); a chemically prepared stick or wick for producing light without fire (योगवर्तिका—दशकुमारचरित); and a powder which, like anæsthetic drugs or curare, paralyses sensory and motor organs¹ (सम्भनचूर्णेनैव इन्द्रियाणाम्—वासवदत्ता—भीन्द्रियकर्मोन्द्रियाणि—Darpana). Vrinda (*circa* 950 A.D.) notices the preparation of sulphide of mercury (रसानृतचूर्णे),

¹ This last interpretation is doubtful; but in any case the familiar use of a technical term of alchemy like Stambhana-churnam (fixation-powder) shows that already in the sixth century this branch of knowledge was widely cultivated.

composed of one part of sulphur and half its weight of mercury; and also of cuprous sulphide (पर्पेटिताच). Chakrapāni (*circa* 1050 A.D.) mentions the preparation of the black sulphide of mercury "by taking equal parts of mercury and sulphur."

The Rasārṇava (*circa* 1200 A.D.) notices the colours of metallic flames, probably after Patañjali—*e.g.* copper gives blue flame; tin, pigeon-coloured; lead, pale; iron, tawny; blue vitriol, red. It may be noted that the Rasārṇava regards mercury as a penta-Bhautic substance.

The Rasaratna-samuchchaya divides the mineral kingdom (Earth substances, simple and compound) into the following classes: (1) The eight Rasas: mica, pyrites, bitumen, blue vitriol, calamine, etc. (2) The eight Uparasas (useful in operations of mercury): sulphur, red ochre, green vitriol, alum, orpiment, realgar, collyrium, and medicinal earth, to which may be added the eight Sādhārana Rasas, sal-ammoniac, cowrie, cinnabar, rock vermilion, etc. (3) The gems diamond, emerald, sapphire, cat's-eye, sun-stone, moon-stone, pearl, etc. (4) The metals gold, silver, iron, copper, lead, tin, and the alloys brass and bell-metal. Other Earth substances are six salts, three alkalis, mineral earths, and several poisons.

Chemical Compositions and Decompositions—Metallurgic Processes.—In these writings¹ we frequently

¹ From Patañjali's and Nāgārjuna's *Lohasāstra* (*circa* 300-500 A.D. f) downwards—(practically everything material in the enumeration that follows was discovered by the end of the sixth century A.D.).

come across instances of chemical composition and decomposition by processes, more or less crude, of calcination, distillation, sublimation, steaming, fixation, etc. (भस्मीकरण, अधःपातन, ऊर्ध्वपातन, स्वेदन, सम्मन, etc.), e.g. the preparation of perchloride of mercury by taking common salt and mercury (रसकपूर—पारदस्य चेतभस्मीकरणे चन्द्रिकाकारः); of sulphide of mercury (हिङ्गुल) by taking sulphur and mercury; of Sindūra from lead (सिन्दूरं नागसम्भवम्—Amarakosha, sixth century A.D.); of the medicinal compounds Svarnasindūra and Rasasindūra with mercury, sulphur, and gold, where gold may have been fancied to influence the resulting compound in some mysterious way, either as a "dynamic" or as a catalytic; also the extraction by chemical decomposition of mercury from sulphide of mercury (हिङ्गुल); of copper from sulphate of copper (तुर्य, सस्यक) by heating this substance with one-fourth of its weight of borax (Rasaratna-samuchchaya,—cf. Bhāvaprakāsa, तुर्यं तु ताम्रोपधातुं किञ्चित् ताम्रं न द्वयति); of zinc (वज्राभ, जसद) from calamine (रसक); of copper from pyrites (नायिक, विमल), etc. (though the golden pyrites were supposed to be a semi-metal of gold, containing some gold along with the essence of copper); the purification of mercury by repeated distillation from lead and tin with which it was wont to be adulterated in the market. The various metallurgic processes described are—extraction, purification, killing (formation of oxides, chlorides, and oxy-chlorides for the most part), calcination, incineration, powdering, solution, distillation, precipitation, rinsing (or washing), drying, steaming, melting, casting, filing, etc., to all which each of the known minerals

was successfully subjected by the use of apparatus and reagents and the application of heat in different measures (सरपाक, मध्यपाक, and मृदुपाक)—methods which, if often crude, especially from the absence of independent and isolated mineral acids, were yet in several instances remarkably simple and effective, and which, after all, by the use of various *Vidas* potentially containing mineral acids (aqua regia, sulphuric acid, hydrochloric acid, etc.), virtually accomplished the practical ends kept in view. To these were added several special processes for mercury (*e.g.* fixation), bringing up the number of mercurial operations to nineteen.

It may be noted that the mixtures called *Vidas*, which potentially contained dilute mineral acids, were regularly employed not only in killing the metals (forming their oxides and chlorides), but—what is of fundamental importance—for purposes of chemical decomposition of metallic salts, etc., and the extraction and purification of metals.

Organic Compounds.—Organic compounds are either vegetable or animal substances (स्वावर जङ्गम भूत). The molasses, the fermented liquors, the saps and juices of plants, fruit acids, vegetable ashes and alkalis, together with the tissues of plants, are vegetable compounds (और्द्धद, स्वावर भूत). Honey, milk, curd, butter, fat, bile, urine, and other excreta, together with the organs and tissues of animals, are animal substances. Charaka notices vegetable as well as animal oils. The viscous (oily) substances are classed under four heads—butters, oils, fats, and marrows (सपिलैलं वसा मज्जा खेहो दृष्टव्यविधः). Salt may be either mineral or vegetable salt.

Susruta divides poisons into two classes—vegetable and animal, but several poisons expressly termed mineral poisons (धातुविष) are included in the first class.

All organic substances, whether animal or vegetable, are penta-Bhautic, being compounded of greater or less proportions of the five Mahābhūtas.

Taking the human body, Charaka finds that the foetus is composed of sixteen organic substances, viz. four composing the sperm-cell which comes from the male; four composing the germ-cell which comes from the female; four added by the transformation of the nutritive material; and finally, four kinds of subtile matter, which together form the vehicle of the conscious principle. As to the four organic substances which compose the sperm-cell, or the other four which compose the germ-cell, it is not clear whether in Charaka's view they are also in their turn compounded of less complex organic substances, or whether their constituent elements are inorganic penta-Bhautic compounds.

The tissues that appear in the course of development of the foetus are further transformations (higher compounds) of these foetal substances. All the component substances of the body are penta-Bhautic compounds, though sometimes they are assigned to the particular Bhūtas which predominate in their composition, *e.g.* bile to Tejas, lymph, chyle, blood, fat, urine, sweat, and other secretions to Ap, and skin, flesh, bones, nails, etc., to Earth. (शुक्रं वाय्वग्निमृग्यवृणोपादवत् ।—गर्भस्य चत्वारि चतुर्विधानि भूतानि मातापितृसम्भवानि आहारानि आत्मकृतानि च *et seq.*—Charaka, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. II., *vide* also Charaka, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. VII., *cf.* Gaṅgādhara's

Jalpakaalpataru. पित्तं तृतीयं भूतं शरीरारम्भकतेजःप्रधानपञ्चभूतविकारात्मकं तेजःस्वरूपं अग्निसंज्ञम् । कफश्चतुर्थं भूतमापः शरीरारम्भकसोमप्रधानपञ्चभूतविकारविशेषः । शरीरं तु पञ्चमहाभूतविकारसमुदायात्मकम् । Cf. Charaka, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. IV., मातृवाद्योऽपि सस्य महाभूतविकाराः ।)

Formation of Molecular Qualities in Chemical Compounds.—The Charaka school, which we have seen was an offshoot of the Sāṅkhya (cf. Charaka, Vimānasthāna, Chap. VIII., यथा वादित्यः प्रकाशकः तथा सोऽप्यवचनं प्रकाशकमिति), supplemented the above account of inorganic and organic compounds with a characteristically Sāṅkhya explanation of the formation of molecular qualities by chemical combination. In Charaka's view, the colours, tastes, etc., of the molecules of chemical compounds result from the collocation in unequal proportion and unstable equilibrium of the different forces latent in the atoms (Paramāṇus) themselves. (एवमेतेषां रसानां घटत्वमुपपन्नं न्यूनातिरेकविशेषात् महाभूतानां । भूतानामिव स्थावरजङ्गमानां नानावर्णोक्तविशेषाः ।—Charaka.)

Chemistry of Colours.—As an interesting example of the way in which a follower of Charaka would account for the colours of chemical compounds, I may note the explanation given by the late Gaṅgādhara Kavirāja Kaviratna in the Jalpakaalpataru, a commentary on the Charaka-Samhitā, published at Calcutta in 1869, premising that the Kavirāja's view is pure and genuine Charaka doctrine. Gaṅgādhara begins with a simple statement. The qualities of the atom, he writes, tend to produce similar qualities in the molecule. A molecular quality is therefore the result of the conjunction or opposition, as the case may be, of the atomic

tendencies. When, for example, the five Bhútas combine to produce an organic compound (the human body), Tejas, Ap, and Earth tend to produce red, white, and black respectively, but in the body (compound substance) the yellow colour may happen to be produced as the result of these tendencies in that particular proportion and collocation. The point to note here is that the molecule forms a fresh collocation, *redistributes the Mass and Energy*, and sets up new forces in the system, which coming into play modify the potencies (or tendencies) in the component atoms, and thus determine the resultant. This is elaborated into a curious but complete theory of the colours of chemical compounds.

The colours (and other qualities) of a simple substance (an isomeric mode of any Bhúta) are the result of the potencies lodged in that particular collocation of Mass, Energy, and Essence. Now when two such substances unite, their colours, etc., tend to be produced, but the combination brings on a fresh distribution of Energy, Mass, and Essence, and the forces thus set free may powerfully modify or even extinguish the separate tendencies or potencies of the component simple substances. For example, when we prepare a collyrium by mixing equal parts of sulphur and mercury (the black sulphide of mercury) we find the resulting compound black. To explain this it has to be remembered that each of the substances (sulphur and mercury) contains Sattva (Essence), Rajas (Energy), and Tamas (Mass) in different proportions, and that predominant Tamas (Inertia, Mass) always produces black, predomi-

nant Sattva (Essence) white, and predominant Rajas (Energy) red. Now in the black sulphide of mercury the white of the mercury tends to produce white, and the yellow of the sulphur yellow, and if these tendencies were not obstructed the result would be a mixed colour. But, in the particular collocation in question, the Tamas of the mercury becomes intensive (तीव्र), and the black of the now intensive Tamas extinguishes the white in the uncompounded mercury, which was due to prevailing Sattva, as well as the yellow of the uncompounded sulphur, which was due to the combined operation of white-producing Sattva and red-producing Rajas. Again, when, with proper apparatus and by the application of heat, we combine mercury and sulphur to produce the red sulphide of mercury, the resulting colour is explained by the fact that in this new collocation the Rajas (Energy)—probably of the mercury, though Gaṅgādhara does not specify—becomes intensive (तीव्र), and extinguishing both the white-producing Sattva of the mercury and the yellow-producing Sattva-Rajas of the sulphur, imparts a red colour to the compound. In these cases, as also in the formation of red by mixing powdered turmeric with lime, *i.e.* whenever a new colour is produced in the compound, it is to be explained by the dominance of Tamas, Rajas, or Sattva, or their combinations, and the extinction of the uncompounded tendencies (or potencies) by the forces set free in the new collocation. But there are other cases where the colour of the compound is a mixed colour resulting from the colours of the combining substances, *e.g.*, when

sulphide of mercury and calcined tin are mixed, the resulting colour is evidently a mixed one (Pátala, pink), which is easily explained by the colours of the component elements (the red of the sulphide of mercury and the white of the calcined tin); in the same way, in a mechanical aggregate, as in a piece of cloth, the colour is white where the threads are white.

तत्कार्थारम्भे पृथिव्यादिद्रव्यावस्थागुणा गन्धादयः सल्लु स्वस्वजातीयं गन्धविशेषादिकं चारभमाणाः यदारभ्यमाणं स्वस्वविजातीयं कार्यं सारम्भकं कारणाच्च अहङ्कारादिस्य गुणांश्च उभयथा कुवचित् हत्वा कुवचित् न हत्वा स्वजातीयं गुणविशेषं चारभन्ते । यथा पारदगन्धकयोः संयोगे कञ्जली-भूतद्रव्ये पारदस्यः शुक्लः शुक्लविशेषं चारभमाणः गन्धकस्यपीतः पीतमारभ-माणः पारदस्यतीक्ष्णेन तैक्ष्ण्यमारभमाणेन विरोधिना बध्यते । सर्वत्रैव शीकृत्यं सञ्चगुणयोनिर्कं तनोगुणयोनिर्केन तैक्ष्ण्येन विरोधिना बध्यते । गन्धकस्य-पीतस्यौ च लोहितशुक्ली रजःसत्त्वयोनिर्की बध्यते । तयोः शुक्लोहितवधे तैक्ष्ण्यसमानयोनिः कृष्णः अभिव्यज्यते । इति पारदगन्धकोभयात्मके कार्ये श्वेतपीतमेलनेन सम्भाव्यं कार्यं यद्वर्णं तत् तीक्ष्णगुणेन बध्यते, तत्रकारणं शुक्लोहितं हत्वा । एवं हिङ्गुले पारदगन्धकान्यामारभ्यमाणे यन्त्रविशेषे वह्निना पच्यमाने रजोबहुलयोनिर्केन तीक्ष्णेन सञ्चतनोयोनिर्की शुक्लकृष्णौ बध्यते । पारदस्यशुक्लगन्धकस्यपीतमेलनेन सम्भाव्यं कार्यं वर्णं च बध्यते । रजोयोनिर्क-लीहितं च अभिव्यज्यते इति । एवं हरिद्राचूर्णसंयोगेऽपि लीहितं अभिव्यज्यते चूर्णस्यतैक्ष्ण्येन हरिद्रास्यशुक्लकृष्णवधे । अथ अत्र यथा—हिङ्गुलवङ्गभस्मसंयोगे श्वेतलोहितवर्णमेव उभयात्मकं भवति पाटलवर्णं, न च तत्र हिङ्गुलस्य लीहितं वङ्गभस्मस्य शीकृत्यं च केनापि बध्यते । एवं शुक्लमूर्चनिर्मितपटस्य शीकृत्यमेव । (Jalpakaalpataru, Sūtrasthāna of Charaka, pp. 198-200 ; edition published by Bhubanachandra Basák, Calcutta, Samvādaratnākara Press, Samvat 1925.) This is quite in a line with Charaka's explanation of the tastes of chemical compounds which has been already noticed.

Parināma-vāda versus Ārambha-vāda.—Charaka's view of the formation of a new quality or a new substance is based on the Sāṅkhya teaching as to the conservation and transformation of Energy, and brings chemical synthesis in a line with evolutionary change (परिवर्तन). On this view, a new substance may arise by spontaneous or isomeric change, i.e. by the interplay of Energies within the system of any given substance, in the absence of any action from without. New qualities like new substances are only readjustments of the old, and continual changes are going on by spontaneous disintegration and recombination. Opposed to this evolutionary view of chemical synthesis is the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika doctrine of Ārambha-vāda, according to which no change of substance or quality, no effect, in short, can take place except by the action of one component element (substance or quality) on another. A binary molecule, for example, cannot possess any "specific quality" (विशेषगुण) of a kind not represented in each of the two component atoms. In the cosmic process no atom can exist free and uncombined with another atom, and every "specific quality" in a substance can be ultimately analysed into the union of two "specific qualities" of the same class in two ultimate particles which cannot be further divided. A single colour, smell, or taste in a single particle, until it can link itself on to another specific quality of its own class in a second particle, cannot characterise any substance formed by the union of these particles as material causes. Hence an Earth-atom cannot unite with an Ap-atom to form a new substance of which

both the particles must be equally regarded as material causes. At any rate, such a compound, if effected, would be smell-less, as of the two constituent atoms only one, viz. the Earth-atom, possesses smell. A compound of Earth and Váyu would be smell-less, colourless, and tasteless, and so on. The Nyáya-Vaisesika does not deny that there may be compounds of different Bhútas, nor does it deny the causal operation of specific qualities as efficient or energising (dynamic) causes (उपहन्तक, निमित्तकारण), but it refuses to place these compounds on the same footing as compounds of isomeric modes of the same Bhúta; and it accepts the "material" causality in such cases of only one of the Bhútas, regarding the others as co-efficients (निमित्तकारण).

The earlier Sāṅkhyas including the medical schools of ancient India brushed all this aside as a distinction without a difference. The Vedāntists, as we shall presently see, flouted this doctrine of Ārambha-vāda. The Jainas, in opposing this Vaisesika view of atomic combination, hit upon a solution of the problem of chemical affinity. Others, again, found out a *via media*. They held, as we learn from the reports of Udyotakara in the Nyáya-vārtika, and of Vāchaspati Misra in the Tātparyyatīkā, that a molecule of the structure EA (one atom of Earth and one of Ap) would exhibit some variety of colour and taste resulting from the joint action of the atoms and of their several colours and tastes. But as in the combination EA only the Earth-atom possesses smell, and the Ap-atom is smell-less, and as moreover no quality in a compound substance can result except from the joint action of the

similar (potential) qualities of at least two component elements, it follows that a molecule of the structure EA would not manifest the energy of smell potentially contained in the Earth-atom. Hence, admitting the combination EA for a smell-less compound, the upholders of this view would suppose a molecule of the type E_2A (i.e. two atoms of Earth and one of Ap) to explain any bi-Bhautic compound of Earth and Ap (like the plant saps and fruit juices) which exhibits smell in addition to the peculiarities of colour and taste. Cf. Vāchaspati's comment on Udyotakara's refutation of this view :—

अयमभिसन्धिः । पृथिव्याप्यपरमाणु तावत्क्षेकं द्वाणुकमारम्भमुद्भूतः तयोः
रूपरसस्पर्शवस्त्रेण तदारम्भसम्भवे अपि गन्धवस्त्राभावप्रसङ्गात् । एवं पार्थिवपाणु-
समवेतस्य गन्धस्य एकत्वेन अनारम्भकत्वात् नापि पार्थिवपरमाणुद्वयं एकस्य
पाथसोपपरमाणुः इति अणूनानारम्भकत्वे गन्धवस्त्रोपपत्तिः इति साम्प्रतं ।
परमाणूनां बहूनां अनारम्भकत्वात् । तथाहि त्रयः परमाणवः न कार्यनारम्भन्ते ।

Measures of Time and Space—Size of Atoms.—The Siddhānta-Śiromani gives the following measures of Time :—

30 Kshanas (क्षण) = 1 day, 30 Kāshthās = 1 Kalā,
2 Ghatikās = 1 Kshana, 18 Nimeshas = 1 Kāshthā,
30 Kalās = 1 Ghatikā, 30 Tatparas = 1 Nimesha,
and 100 Trutis = 1 Tatpara.

This makes a Truti of time equal to $\frac{1}{100}$ of a second, which is nearly the measure of the Paramānu of time as given in the Vishnu Purāna (vide Bhāskara's Siddhānta-Śiromani—कालमानाध्याय).

The above measures were in use among the astronomers, but the physicists computed according to the

following table given both in Udayana's Kiranāvali and Śrīdhara's Nyāya-Kandali:—

30 Muhūrtas = 1 day (24 hours),	
30 Kalās = 1 Muhūrta,	2 Lavas = 1 Nimesha,
30 Kāshthās = 1 Kalā,	2 Kshanas = 1 Lava.
18 Nimeshas = 1 Kāshthā,	

अणद्वयं लघुः प्रोक्तो निमेषस्तु लघुद्वयम्,

अष्टादशनिमेषास्तु काष्ठा त्रिंशत् ताः कलाः ।

त्रिंशत्कला मुहूर्तैः स्यात् त्रिंशद्रात्र्यहणी च ते ।

(Udayana, Kiranāvali.)

This makes 1 Kshana of the Nyāya-Vaisesika equal to $\frac{2}{45}$ of a second. The Nyāya assumes that the unit of physical change (or the time occupied by any single antecedent step in a causal series before the succeeding step is ushered in) is equal to a Kshana (or $\frac{2}{45}$ of a second). The astronomers were familiar with far smaller measures of time. The astronomical Truti of time measures about the thirty-four-thousandth part of a second. This is of special value in determining the exact character of Bhāskara's claim to be regarded as the precursor of Newton in the discovery of the principle of the Differential Calculus, as well as in its application to astronomical problems and computations. This claim, as I proceed to show, is absolutely established; it is indeed far stronger than Archimedes' to the conception of a rudimentary process of Integration. Bhāskara, in computing the "instantaneous motion" (तात्कालिकी गति) of a planet, compares its successive positions, and regards its motion as constant during the interval (which of course cannot be greater than a Truti of time, though

it may be indefinitely less). This *Tātkālika* motion is no other than the differential of the planet's longitude, and Bāpudeva Śāstri claims that both the conception of the instantaneous motion and *the method of determining it* plainly show that Bhāskara was acquainted with the principle of the Differential Calculus. On the data before him, Mr. Spottiswoode remarks that Bāpudeva Śāstri "overstates the case." Bhāskara "makes no allusion to one of the most essential features of the Differential Calculus, viz. the infinitesimal magnitude of the intervals of time and space therein employed. Nor indeed is anything specifically said about the fact that the method is an approximate one." "With all these reservations," Mr. Spottiswoode continues, "it must be admitted that the formula he establishes and the method of establishing it bear a strong analogy to the corresponding process in modern mathematical astronomy" (viz., the determination of the differential of the planet's longitude—by no means the first step in transcendental analysis or in its application to astronomy). And Mr. Spottiswoode concludes by stating that mathematicians in Europe will be surprised to learn of the existence of such a process in the age of Bhāskara (*circa* 1150 A.D.—born 1114 A.D.). Mr. Spottiswoode's second objection, that Bhāskara does not specifically state that the method of the Calculus is only approximative, cannot be taken seriously. The conception of limit and the computation of errors came late in the history of the Calculi of Fluxions and Infinitesimals. For the rest, Bhāskara introduces his computation expressly as a "correction" of Brahma-

gupta's rough simplification. The first objection (viz. that Bhāskara makes no allusion to the infinitesimal magnitude of the intervals of space and time employed) would be more to the point if it were well founded.¹ But it is not, and Mr. Spottiswoode's error was due to the insufficiency of the data supplied to him. As a matter of fact, even Bhāskara's unit, the *Truti* of time (or *Paramānu*), is exceedingly small, as the very name implies, being about one thirty-four-thousandth of a second of time. And in the passage in which Bhāskara describes the process, he distinguishes between *Sthūla-gati* and *Sūkshma-gati* (velocity roughly measured, and measured accurately, i.e. by reference to indefinitely small quantities; for *Sūkshma*, as we have seen, has always a reference to the *Anu*, the indefinitely small); indeed, he expressly mentions that the *Sthūla-gati* takes only *Sthūla-kāla* (finite time) into consideration, and that the determination of the *Tātkālikī-gati* (*Sūkshma-gati*) must have reference to the moment (*प्रतिक्षणम्*), which is an indefinitely small quantity of time, being, of course, smaller than his unit, the *Truti*. (Cf. इयं किल स्थूला गतिः अथ सूक्ष्मा तात्कालिकी कथ्यते यदा चास्त्वस्तिव्यक्तस्तदा तात्कालिक्या गत्या तिथिसाधनं कर्तुं युज्यते । तया समीपचालनञ्च । यदा तु दूरतरस्तिव्यक्तः दूरचालनं वा चन्द्रस्य तदा आद्यया स्थूलाया कर्तुं युज्यते स्थूलकालत्वात् । यतश्चन्द्रगतिः महत्त्वात् प्रतिक्षणं समानं भवति अतस्तदर्थं अयं विशेषोऽभिहितः;—nothing can be clearer

¹ It is an error to suppose that infinitesimals are indispensable to the Calculus, but I am here speaking of the earlier Calculi, and not of the modern developments which have made the Calculus independent of infinitesimals. My claim on behalf of Bhāskara is limited to the historically earlier imperfect form of the Calculus.

than this conception of "momentary" motion.—Bhāskara, *Siddhānta-Śiromani*, *Gaṇitādhyāya*, *Gatisphutiprakaraṇa*; cf. also प्रतिद्युषं सा न सना महत्त्वतः, *ibid.*; cf. also *Golādhyāya*, *Tātkālikī-karaṇa-vāsanā-prakarana*, where Bhāskara points out that the mode of computing adopted by the Āchāryya (Brahmagupta) is a rough simplification. The idea of resolved components of motion was familiar to the astronomers (cf. एवं सत्ताचार्येण लाघवायं दृष्टयदीसम्बन्धिनो गतिकला सर्वे प्रवित्राः । *ibid.*). I may add *en passant* that Bhāskara's formula for the computation of a table of sines also implies his use of the principle of the Differential Calculus.

Measures of Weight and Capacity.—The *Amarakosha* mentions measures of three kinds—weight, length, and capacity (मानं बुलान्गुलिप्रस्थः).

The *Krishnala* (Guñjā, *Raktikā*, the black-and-red berry of the shrub *Abrus Precatorius*) was employed as a natural measure of weight. Eighty *Krishnala* berries on the average weigh 105 grains Troy, and this must be taken as the basis of our computation, though in current practice eighty *Krishnalas* are taken to be equivalent to 210 grains. One *Krishnala* was supposed to weigh as much as three medium-sized barley seeds (मध्यवप), one of the latter as much as six white mustard seeds (गौरसर्षप), one white mustard as much as three *Rāji* mustard seeds (राजिसर्षप), one of these seeds as much as three *Likshas*, and one *Liksha* as much as eight *Rajas* or *Trasareaus*.

We now come to conventional measures. One gold *Māshā* was the weight of five *Krishnalas* of gold, one *Suvarṇa* or *Tolā* weighed as much as sixteen *Māshās*,

and one Pala as much as four Suvarnas or Tolás. A Pala of gold therefore weighs 320 *Krishnalas* (Manu, Chap. VIII.; Vishnu, Chap. IV.; and Yájñavalkya, Chap. I.).

A Máshá of gold therefore would weigh $6\frac{9}{16}$ grains; a Tolá, 105 grains (in current practice it weighs nearly double, as I have stated); and a Pala, 420 grains Troy.

The measures for silver were the following:—1 silver Máshá = 2 *Krishnalas*, 1 Dharana = 16 silver Máshás, and 1 Pala = 10 Dharanas. A Pala of silver would therefore weigh 320 *Krishnalas*. In other words, the Pala was a fixed measure of weight, and was equal to about 420 grains Troy, or double this if we take the *Krishnala* of current practice.

A Pala, which equals 320 *Krishnalas*, was subdivided by 4, 16, and 5 successively for gold, and by 10, 16, and 2 successively for silver. A Suvarna (or Tolá) of gold corresponds roughly to a Dharana of silver, and a gold Máshá to a silver Máshá, but the sizes (or volumes) are not the same, and we must not therefore conclude that gold was supposed to be heavier than silver in the proportion of 5 to 2.

We find that 1296 *Trasarenu* equal one *Krishnala*. A *Trasarenu*, as a measure of weight, therefore, is the equivalent of $\frac{1}{1296}$ of a grain Troy, or double this according to current measures.

But the *Trasarenu* of physics is a different conception. It stands for the *minimum visibile*, i.e., as the physicists define it, that which is just discernible as a glancing particle in the slanting beams of the

morning (or afternoon) sun coming into a dark room through a chink or orifice of a window. This is a measure of size (or rather *stimulus limen*).

Measures of Capacity.—Here the standard was furnished by the Kudava (कुड़ावा), a vessel described as 3 *Āṅgulis* long, 4 *Āṅgulis* broad, and $1\frac{1}{2}$ *Āṅguli* deep, with a cubical capacity of $13\frac{1}{2}$ cubical *Āṅgulis*. 4 Kudavas = 1 Prastha, 4 Prasthas = 1 *Ādhaka*, 4 *Ādhakas* = 1 Drona, and 4 Dronas = 1 Khāri or Bhāra.

24 *Āṅgulis* make 1 Hasta, cubit, which may be taken to be 18 or 19 inches. A Kudava was divided into 4 Palas, and there can be no doubt that originally water of the weight of 4 Palas was found to be actually contained in a vessel of the cubical capacity of a Kudava. If we take the ancient cubit to have been 19 inches, the Kudava would contain nearly 4 Palas of distilled water at 30° Centigrade. On a cubit of 18 inches, the Kudava would contain about $3\frac{3}{4}$ Palas.

The Kudava in current medical practice is supposed to represent a cubical vessel, each side being 4 *Āṅgulis*. This would give a capacity of 27 cubic inches, if we take the modern cubit of 18 inches. The Kavirājas take a Kudava to contain 8 Palas of water, and as 1 Pala = 320 Krishnalas, and 80 Krishnalas are now taken to be equal to 210 grains Troy, a vessel of a capacity of 27 cubic inches is accordingly supposed to contain about 6,720 grains Troy—which is not very wide of the mark, being about 1·3 per cent. short for distilled water at 86° Fahrenheit or 30° Centigrade.

Size of the Minimum Visible; Size of an Atom.—The

supposed thickness of the just-discernible mote in the sunbeam (called a Paramānu in Technology, Silpa-sāstra, and a Trasarenu in Natural Philosophy) follows directly from Varāhamihira's table:—8 Paramānus make 1 Rajas (or Ratharenu,—cf. the Manasara), 8 Rajas make 1 Vālāgra (filament of hair), 8 Vālāgras make 1 Likshā, 8 Likshās make 1 Yúkā, 8 Yúkās make 1 Yava, 8 Yavas (the Manasara has 4) make 1 Āṅguli (superior), 24 Āṅgulis make 1 Hasta (cubit, lesser cubit, 18 inches). The thickness of the *minimum visibile* (the finest perceptible mote in the slanting sunbeam) is therefore taken to be 3.2^{-20} , or $\frac{1}{349523}$ of an inch. The volume of a spherical Trasarenu (or Paramānu of the Silpa-sāstra) would therefore be $\frac{4}{3} \pi 3^3 2^{-63}$ of a cubic inch. It may be here noted that such a Trasarenu is supposed in the medical schools to contain 30 chemical atoms (Paramānus of Natural Philosophy) according to one estimate, or 60 according to another. The size of an atom must then have been conceived to be less than $\pi 3.5^{-1} 2^{-62}$ of a cubic inch.¹ (परमाणुरनोधात्मासल्लक्ष्यकं यथोऽङ्गुलं चेति सहस्रगुणानि यथोत्तरम् अङ्गुलमेकं भवति संख्या.—Varāhamihira, Vṛhatsamhitā, Chap. LVII., Śloka 2. जालान्तरगते भानौ यदङ्गुतरं दर्शनं रजो याति तद्विद्यात् परमाणुं प्रथमं तद्वि प्रमाणानाम् ।—*ibid.*, Śloka 1.—Cf. Utpala, तत्परमाणुं नाम प्रमाणं जानीयात् । प्रमाणानां सर्वेषां तत् प्रथममाद्यं प्रमाणं परमाणुसंज्ञम् । Cf. also चसरेणुस्तु विज्ञेयः विंशता परमाणुभिः.)

The magnitude of a Paramānu is called Pārimāṇḍalya (पारिमाण्डल्य) in the Nyāya-Vaisesika, the name suggest-

¹ Curiously enough, this is fairly comparable (in order of magnitude) with the three latest determinations of the size of the hydrogen atom!

ing that the Paramānus were conceived to be spherical in shape. The Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika calls a Paramānu a mere point with infinitesimal dimensions, *i.e.* less than any assignable fraction of any finite quantum; but in the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala, a Paramānu, though indefinitely small, had still assignable dimensions, being divisible into Tanmātras, which were themselves integrations of Bhūtādi. The diameter of a spherical Paramānu must have been conceived to be less than 3.2^{-20} of an inch (*i.e.* less than the conventional Paramānu with which linear measures begin), and the volume of a Paramānu would, therefore, in accordance with Bhāskara's formula, be smaller than $\frac{3}{4}\pi.3^3.2^{-63}$ or $\pi.3^3.2^{-61}$ of a cubic inch, where $\pi = \frac{3.927}{1.250}$. The Tanmātras were conceived as smaller still.

That these were conventional measures arbitrarily assumed goes without question, for of course the Hindus had no physical data for a mathematical calculation of these minute quantities. A Vālāgra (hair-tip, or finest filament of hair), for example, is taken to be 3.2^{-14} of an inch thick, *i.e.* less than one-five-thousandth fraction of an inch in thickness; and a fibril of the networks of Dhamani or Nādi (nerve) that supply the pores of the skin (papillæ? मुखानि रोमकूप-प्रतिवहानि, Susruta) was supposed to be about a thousandth part of the finest hair in thickness, or $\frac{1}{1000}$ of the *minimum visibile*, and, therefore, about $3.10^{-3} 2^{-14}$ of an inch thick (*cf.* मूलनाडीप्रचारः रोमः सहस्रभागेनतुल्यामु प्रचारति, Pañchadasi); but it is evident that these measures were arbitrarily fixed upon, instead of being arrived at by calculation or actual measurement. Indeed, Charaka

expressly states that the number of Śīrās and Dhamaṇīs in the body (three million fifty-six thousand nine hundred) is only a conjectural estimate (अनिर्देश्यमतः परं त्रयमेव—Śīrāsthāna, Chap. VII.).

My account of the chemistry of the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala, and of the affiliated Yoga and medical schools, has anticipated in several points the views of the Vedānta and the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika. The chemical facts, processes, and apparatus are indeed common to all the schools. In the following account of the chemistry of the schools other than the Sāṅkhya-Pātañjala, I will confine myself to the theory of the subject, and even of this I will attempt only the briefest outline.

THE VEDĀNTIC VIEW.

The Vedāntists believe Māyā to be the "material cause" (उपादानकारण) of the world. The power of Māyā is the power to realise the unreal—to impart practical Reality or mediate existence to that which does not and cannot possess absolute Reality or self-existence. Māyā is at once real and unreal, while the Brahma (Self) is absolute Reality, absolute Intelligence, and absolute Bliss. The world evolves out of Māyā (मायापरिणाम), so that Māyā in the Vedānta replaces the Prakṛiti of the Sāṅkhya. But Māyā, and by implication the world, originate out of Brahma, not by a process of evolution (परिणाम), but of Vivarta (self-alienation). The self-alienation of the Absolute, acting through Māyā, produces in the beginning Ākāśa—one, infinite, ubiquitous, imponderable, inert, and all-

pervasive. The world thus begun goes on evolving, in increasing complexity. The other Sūkshma Bhútas, classes of subtile matter, evolve from Ákása in an ascending linear order—Ákása giving off Váyu, Váyu giving off Tejas, Tejas giving off Ap, and Ap giving off Earth. Ákása (one, infinite, all-pervasive) has the capacity of sound. Váyu (subtile gaseous matter) emanates from the universal Ákása, and is instinct with the potential of mechanical energy (impact, pressure) (ईरण, प्रशानित्व, वहन, व्यूहन, —पायोद्य सव्वेचेष्टाहेतुत्वेन सव्वैविनाभूतत्वात् —Vidvanmanorañjini). Tejas (subtile radiant matter) emanates from Váyu, and contains in *potentia* the energy of light and heat. Ap (subtile viscous matter) is the transformation of Tejas, and is instinct with the energy that stimulates the nerve of taste, and lastly, Earth (subtile hard matter), which is the transformation of Ap, possesses the latent energy of smell.

But the subtile rudiments of matter must be compounded in various ways to give rise to the gross constituent matter of the world. These forms of gross matter are called Mahábhútas. There are five kinds of Mahábhúta (gross matter) corresponding to the five Sūkshma Bhútas (subtile matter), and the process by which a Mahábhúta is produced from the Sūkshma Bhútas is called Pañchíkarana (quintuplication). All the five Sūkshma Bhútas are present as ingredients, though in different proportions, in each Mahábhúta.

The Mahábhúta Earth, gross Earth-matter, is composed of four parts of subtile Earth-matter and one part each of the other forms of subtile matter. The Mahábhúta Váyu is composed of four parts of subtile

gaseous matter and one part each of the other forms of subtile matter. And similarly with other Mahábhútas.

Hence if *ak*, *v*, *t*, *ap*, *e*, represent the five forms of subtile matter (*Ákása*, *Váyu*, *Tejas*, *Ap*, and *Earth*), and *AK*, *V*, *T*, *AP*, *E*, stand for the corresponding Mahábhútas, we may represent the constitution of the Mahábhútas as follows :—

AK = *ak*₁ (*v*₁, *t*₁, *ap*₁, *e*₁), *ak*₁ being the radicle.

V = *v*₁ (*ak*₁, *t*₁, *ap*₁, *e*₁), *v*₁ being the radicle.

T = *t*₁ (*ak*₁, *v*₁, *ap*₁, *e*₁), *t*₁ being the radicle.

AP = *ap*₁ (*ak*₁, *v*₁, *t*₁, *e*₁), *ap*₁ being the radicle.

E = *e*₁ (*ak*₁, *v*₁, *t*₁, *ap*₁), *e*₁ being the radicle.

In forms of gross or compounded matter the potential energies (or qualities) become actualised. The Mahábhúta *Ákása* manifests sound; *Váyu*, sound and mechanical energy; *Tejas*, sound, mechanical energy, and heat-light; *Ap*, the energy of the taste-stimulus in addition; and finally, *Earth*, the energy of the smell-stimulus added to the foregoing.

The *Pañchadáśi* characterises the different Mahábhútas by their typical sounds: *e.g.*, *Ákása* by the echo (hollow booming sound); *Váyu* (air) by a sibilant sound, hissing, susurration (imitative symbol, *Visi*); *Tejas* (fire) by a puffing (or roaring) sound (imitative symbol, *Bhugubhugu*); *Ap* (water) by a liquid sound (imitative symbol, *Culu-culu*, gurgle, plash-plash, glut-glut); and finally, *Earth* by a splitting or rattling sound, a crack or a thud (symbol, *Kad-kada*). (Chap. II. *Bhútaviveka*, *Śloka* 3, *Pañchadáśi*. Cf. also *Jayanta*, *Mañjari*.)

Others hold that *Ákása* (ether) never enters as a

component part, and is always one and indivisible. In this view the four Mahábhútas—Váyu, Tejas, Ap, and Earth—alone are supposed to be compounded, and by a process which may be called quaternion (*cf.* the Neo-Platonist quaternion):—

$$V = v_1 (t_1, ap_1, e_1).$$

$$T = t_2 (v_1, ap_1, e_1).$$

$$AP = ap_2 (v_1, t_1, e_1).$$

$$E = e_2 (v_1, t_1, ap_1).$$

These compound forms, as before, are supposed to exercise their specific energies actively. Others again hold that the Mahábhútas Tejas, Ap, and Earth alone are compounded by a process named Trivrit-karana (triplication). Thus $T = t_2 (ap_1, e_1)$, $AP = ap_2 (t_1, e_1)$, $E = e_2 (t_1, ap_1)$.

The Sūkshma Bhútas are forms of homogeneous and continuous matter, without any atomicity of structure; the Mahábhútas are composite; but even these are regarded as continuous, and without any atomic structure. The Vedánta speaks of Anu (Paramánu) not as an ultimate indivisible discrete constituent of matter, but as the smallest conceivable quantum or measure of matter. In the Sāṅkhya doctrine the atomic structure is ordinarily accepted. The Gunas are supposed to be परिच्छिन्न and अणु, bounded and indefinitely small in size (except the Gunas giving rise to Ákāśa and Manas, which are unlimited अपरिच्छिन्न); and hence the Tanmátras and Paramánu must be conceived to have a discrete structure.

As I have already noted in my account of the

genesis of Tanmātras and Paramānus, various schools of Vedāntists (*e.g.* the Rāmānujists and the followers of Nimbārka) combined, in the orthodox fashion of the Smṛitis and the Purānas, the Vedāntic theosophy with the Sāṅkhya cosmology, especially as regards Prakṛiti and the order of creation and dissolution. For example, the Vedānta-kaustubhaprabhā, fortifying itself with texts from the Viṣṇu Purāna and the Subala and Gopāla Upanishads, contends that, at the cosmic dissolution (Pralaya), each Mahābhūta merges into the one that preceded it in the order of creation by first disintegrating into its own proper Tanmātric form (तन्मात्रद्वारा), and that the Mahābhūta Ākāśa merges into the original Tanmātras, which then lapse into Bhūtādi, the super-subtile rudiment-matter, proto-matter (Chap. II., Pada III., Sutra 14).

Parināma — Evolutionary Process. — When the Mahābhūtas are once formed, the different kinds of substance are derived from them by the evolutionary process called Parināma (परिणाम, transformation). Matter is constantly undergoing change of state. The effect is only the cause in a new collocation (कारणस्यैव संस्थानमात्रं कार्यम्). Change is of two kind :—

(1) Change by a spontaneous process, without external influence, including isomeric change (स्वानाविक परिणाम). The Vedāntists believe in spontaneous disintegration and reintegration. Action from without, impressed force *ab extra*, is not, *pace* the Naiyāyikas, always a condition of change of state (whether of rest or of motion); nor is it necessary that more than one substance should combine to generate another substance

or variety of substance (*e.g.* the formation of curds from milk, of ice from water, etc.). All this is directed against the Nyáya doctrine (Árambhaváda).

(2) Change due to combination with other substances (द्रव्यान्तरसंयोग). Such combination may produce (*a*) a compound substance possessing like qualities with the constituents (समानजातोयोत्पत्ति), or (*b*) unlike compounds with new qualities, "heteropathic effects" (विजातोयोत्पत्ति). Any new quality thus evolved through (chemical) combination is called Samhata-bhúta-dharma (संहतभूतधर्मे), *e.g.* the intoxicating power of the fermented rice and molasses, which does not exist in the ingredients taken separately (मद्यबोजानां प्रत्येकं अवर्तमानापि समुदायशक्त्या मदशक्तिः दृश्यते). This Sambhúyakriyá (सम्भूयक्रिया, समुत्प्यान) corresponds to chemical combination, and the Vedántists, like the Sāṅkhyas, explain this only as the evolution of the latent Energy (शक्ति, अनुभूतशक्ति) in a new collocation (संस्थान, अवयव-सन्निवेश). But, unlike the mediæval Sāṅkhya, the Vedānta freely recognises the combination of heterogeneous Bhútas. Thus Earth, Ap, Tejas, and Váyu freely combine in different proportions and groupings to produce the variety of substances in the world. For example, the animal organism is a compound of all the five Bhútas (पाच-भौतिक). It is not merely the concomitant or efficient causes that may be heterogeneous to the material cause, as the Naiyáyikas contend, but several heterogeneous substances (or Bhútas) may unite as "material causes" to produce a new substance.

The Vedántists resolve all activity—physical, vital, as well as psychical—into modes of motion, subtile

योयुक्तं । न च स्पृशैश्वर्यत्वात् एकद्रव्यत्वात् च आकाशस्य आरम्भकत्वानुप-
पत्तिरिति वाच्यं । आरम्भवादस्य अनङ्गीकारात् । एकस्यापि दुग्धावयवविनो
दध्यारम्भकत्वदर्शनात् । यस्तु तस्मिन् पञ्चानां भूतानां पञ्चात्मकत्वस्य दर्शितत्वात्
आरम्भवादस्य निराकृतत्वात् च । तस्मात् सिद्धं शरीरं पाञ्चभौतिकमिति ।
—Vidvanmanoranjanī.

न तावत् समानजातीयमेव आरभते न भिन्नजातीयमिति नियमो वास्ति ।
समवायिकारणं एव समानजातीयत्वाभ्युपगमः न कारणान्तरविषय इति तदपि
अनैकान्तिकम् । नापि अनेकमेव आरभते नैकमिति नियमोऽस्ति । अणुमनसो-
राद्यकर्मोत्पत्तिरभ्युपगमात् । एकैको हि परमाणुश्चाद्यं स्वकर्मोत्पत्तिरभते न द्रव्यान्तरं
संहत्य इत्यभ्युपगम्यते । द्रव्यारम्भे एव अनेकारम्भकत्वनियम इति चेत् न परि-
णामाभ्युपगमात् । तदेव तु द्रव्यं विशेषवदवस्थान्तरं आपद्यमानं कार्यं नामाभ्यु-
पगम्यते । तच्च क्वचित् अनेकं परिणामते मृद्गीनाङ्कुरादिभावेन । क्वचिदेकं परि-
णामते क्षीरादि-द्रव्यादिभावेन । नेष्ट्ररक्षासनं चलि अनेकं एव कारणं कार्यं
जनयति इति ।—Śāṅkara, Śāriraka-Bhāṣya, Sūtra 7,
Pada III., Adhyāya 2.

THE ATOMIC THEORY OF THE BUDDHISTS.

The Buddhists recognise four essentials of matter, viz. extension (with hardness), cohesion (with fluidity), heat, and pressure (with motion), and four sensibles, viz. colour, taste, smell, and touch (*vide* Dhamma-saṅgani, Attha-sālinī, etc.).

The later Vaibhāṣikas hold that the Vāyu-atoms are touch-sensibles, having impact or pressure for their characteristic property, and by aggregation form the element Vāyu; the Tejas-atoms are colour-and-touch-sensibles, having heat for their characteristic, and by aggregation form the Tejas Bhūta; the Ap-atoms are taste-colour-and-touch-sensibles with a characteristic viscosity, and form the Ap-element by

aggregation; and finally, the Earth-atoms are smell-taste-colour-and-touch-sensibles possessing a characteristic dryness or roughness (सरत्त्व), and by their aggregation form the Earth-element. The Bhútas thus originated combine to form aggregates, which are classed as inorganic substances, organisms, and organs. (कामेश्वद्रूपकोशः,—रूपरसगन्धस्पर्श इति चत्वारि द्रव्याणि पृथिव्यपतेनोवायुः इति चत्वारि,—also सरस्वहोषेरणस्रभावाणि भूतानि).

THE ATOMIC THEORY OF THE JAINAS.

Of the nine categories of the Jainas, that of Ajīva (the not-soul or non-Ego) consists of five entities, four of which are immaterial (अमूर्त), viz. merit, demerit, space and time, and the fifth, material (मूर्त, possessing figure). The last is called Pudgala (Matter), and this alone is the vehicle of Energy, which is essentially kinetic, i.e. of the nature of motion. Everything in the world of not-soul (the non-Ego) is either an entity (द्रव्य) or a change of state in an entity (पर्याय). Pudgala (Matter) and its changes of state (पर्याय), whether of the nature of subtile motion (परिस्पन्द) or of evolution (परिणाम), must furnish the *physical* as opposed to the *metaphysical* basis of all our explanations of Nature. Pudgala (Matter) exists in two forms—Anu (atom) and Skandha (aggregate). The Jainas begin with an absolutely homogeneous mass of Pudgalas, which by differentiation (भेद) breaks up into several kinds of atoms qualitatively determined, and by differentiation, integration, and differentiation in the integrated (संघातात्, भेदात्, संघातभेदात्—Umāsvāti, Chap. V., Sutra 26), forms aggre-

gates (Skandhas). An Anu has no parts, no beginning, middle, or end. An Anu is not only infinitesimal, but also eternal and ultimate. A Skandha may vary from a binary aggregate (द्वयुक) to an infinitum (अनन्ताणुक). A binary Skandha is an aggregate of two Anus (atoms), a tertiary Skandha is formed by the addition of an atom (Anu) to the binary (द्वयुक), and so on *ad infinitum*. The ascending grades are (1) what can be numbered (संख्येय), (2) indefinitely large (असंख्येय), (3) infinity of the first order (अनन्त), (4) infinity of the second order (अनन्तानन्त), and so on.

General Properties of Matter.—The specific characters of the Pudgalas (Matter) are of two kinds, (1) those which are found in atoms as well as in aggregates, and (2) those which are found only in aggregates. Qualities of touch, taste, smell, and colour come under the first head. The original Pudgalas being homogeneous and indeterminate, all sensible qualities, including the infra-sensible qualities of atoms, are the result of evolution (परिचय). Every atom thus evolved possesses an infra-sensible (or potential) taste, smell, and colour (one kind of each), and two infra-sensible tactile qualities, *e.g.* a certain degree of roughness or smoothness (or dryness and moistness?) and of heat or cold. Earth-atoms, Ap-atoms, etc., are but differentiations of the originally homogeneous Pudgalas. The tactile qualities (स्पर्श, स्निग्ध, उष्ण, शीत) appear first, but qualities of taste, smell, and colour are involved in the possession of tactile qualities. An aggregate (Skandha), whether binary, tertiary, or of a higher order, possesses (in addition to touch, taste,

smell, and colour) the following physical characters: (1) sound, (2) atomic linking, or mutual attraction and repulsion of atoms, (3) dimension, small or great, (4) figure, (5) divisibility, (6) opacity and casting of shadows, and (7) radiant heat-and-light.

Sensible Qualities.—Tactile qualities are of the following kinds: hardness or softness, heaviness or lightness (degrees of pressure), heat or cold, and roughness or smoothness (or dryness and viscosity?). Of these the atoms (*Ānus*) possess only temperature and degrees of roughness or smoothness, but all the four kinds of tactile qualities in different degrees and combinations characterise aggregates of matter from the binary molecule upwards. The Jainas appear to have thought that gravity was developed in molecules as the result of atomic linking. Simple tastes are of five kinds—bitter, pungent, astringent, acid, and sweet. Salt is supposed by some to be resolvable into sweet, while others consider it as a compound taste. Smells are either pleasant or unpleasant. Mallishena notes some elementary varieties of unpleasant smell, *e.g.* the smell of asafoetida, ordure, etc. The simple colours are five—black, blue, red, yellow, and white. Sounds may be classed as loud or faint, bass (thick) or treble (hollow), clang, or articulate speech.

The most remarkable contribution of the Jainas to the atomic theory relates to their analysis of atomic linking, or the mutual attraction (or repulsion) of atoms in the formation of molecules. The question is raised in Umāsvāti's Jaina Sūtras (*circa* A.D. 40?)—what constitutes atomic linking? Is mere contact (or

juxtaposition) of atoms sufficient to cause linking? No distinction is here made between the forces that bind together atoms of the same Bhūta and the chemical affinity of one Bhūta to another. The Jainas hold that the different classes of elementary substances (Bhūtas) are all evolved from the same primordial atoms. The intra-atomic forces which lead to the formation of chemical compounds do not therefore differ in kind from those that explain the original linking of atoms to form molecules.

Mere juxtaposition (संयोग) is insufficient; *linking* of atoms or molecules must follow before a compound can be produced. The linking takes place under different conditions. Ordinarily speaking, one particle of matter (पुत्रल) must be negative and the other positive (विपक्षगुणपुत्रल); the two particles must have two peculiar opposite qualities, roughness and smoothness (रुद्धत्व and चिम्बत्व, or dryness and viscosity?), to make the linking possible. But no linking takes place where the qualities, though opposed, are very defective or feeble (जयन्तगुण). We have seen that, ordinarily speaking, two homogeneous particles, *i.e.* both positive or both negative, do not unite. This is the case where the opposed qualities are equal in intensity. But if the strength or intensity of the one is twice as great as that of the other, or exceeds that proportion, then even similar particles may be attracted towards each other. In every case change of state in both the particles is supposed to be the result of this linking, and the physical characters of the aggregate depend on the nature of this linking. When particles of equal

intensity (negative and positive) modify each other there is mutual action; in cases of unequal intensity the higher intensity transforms the lower, it being apparently thought that an influence proceeds from the higher to the lower. All changes in the qualities of atoms depend on this linking. A crude theory, this, of chemical combination, very crude but immensely suggestive, and possibly based on the observed electrification of smooth and rough surfaces as the result of rubbing. The interpretation of रुक्ष and स्निग्ध as dry and viscous must be rejected in this connection as untenable. The Tattvārthādhigama of Umāsvatī, which expounds the theory, most probably dates back to the first half of the first century A.D.

Cf. Umāsvatī-Tattvārthādhigama, Chap. V. :—

अनीयकाया धर्माधर्माकाशपुञ्जलाः । द्रव्याणि जीवाश्च । नित्यावस्थितानि अरूपाणि । रुषिणः पुञ्जलाः । आकाशादेकद्रव्याणि । निष्क्रियाणि च । पुञ्जलजीवास्तु क्रियापन्तः । (क्रियेति गतिकर्म्मोह) । सर्वेषां प्रदेशाः सन्ति अन्यत्र परमाणोः । संस्थेयासंस्थेयाश्च पुञ्जलानां । नाणोः । स्पर्शरसगन्धवर्णवन्तः पुञ्जलाः । तत्र स्पर्शोऽप्यविधः कठिनो मृदुर्गुरुलघुः शीतो उष्णः स्निग्धः रुक्ष इति । रसः पञ्चविधलिङ्गः कटुः कषायोऽम्लोमधुर इति । गन्धो द्विविधः सुरभिरसुरभिश्च । वर्णः पञ्चविधः कृष्णो नीलो लोहितः पीतः शुक्ल इति ।

शब्दस्त्वन्धसौख्यस्यैतत्पसंस्थानभेदतमश्चायातपोद्योतवन्नाश्च । तत्र शब्दः षड्विधः ततो विततो घनः शुशिरो घर्षो भावश्च । अक्षयः स्वन्याश्च । उक्तं च । कारणमेव तदन्ये मृच्छो नित्यश्च भवति परमाणुः । शब्दरसगन्धवर्णो द्विस्पर्शः कार्यलिङ्गश्च । तत्राणवोऽप्यष्टाः स्वन्यास्तु षड्वा एव । स्वन्यास्तावत् संघातभेदेऽप्युत्पद्यन्ते । संघाताद्भेदात् संघातभेदादिति । द्वयोः परमाणवोः संघाताद्द्विप्रदेशः । द्विप्रदेशश्चाणवोऽप्युत्पद्यन्ते संघातात् त्रिप्रदेशः । एवं संस्थेयानामसंस्थेयानामनन्तानां अनन्तानन्तानां च प्रदेशानां संघातात् प्रदेशाः । भेदादणुः । भेदादेव परमाणुरुत्पद्यते न संघातादिति । अत्राह । किं संयोगमात्रादेव संघातो भवति । आहोस्त्रिदलि कश्चिद्विशेष इति । अत्रोच्यते । सति संयोगे षडस्य संघातो भवतीति । स्निग्ध-

रूपात्माद्वन्धः । न जघन्यगुणानाम् । छिग्धरूपायोः पुनरुत्पत्तयोः स्पृश्योर्वन्धो भवतीति । जघन्यगुणछिग्धानां जघन्यगुणरूपाणां च परस्पररेण बन्धो न भवतीति । उक्तं भवता जघन्यगुणवर्जानां छिग्धानां रूपाणां रूपाणां च छिग्धेन सह बन्धो भवतीति । अथ तुल्यगुणयोः किमत्यन्तप्रतिषेध इति । अत्रोच्यते । न । गुणसाम्ये सदृशानां । गुणसाम्ये सति सदृशानां बन्धो न भवति । तदुपपा । तुल्यगुणछिग्धस्य तुल्यगुणछिग्धेन तुल्यगुणरूपास्य तुल्यगुणरूपाणां इति । अत्राह सदृशग्रहणे किमपेक्षते इति । अत्रोच्यते । गुणवैषम्ये सदृशानां बन्धो भवति इति । अत्राह किमपेक्षते गुणवैषम्ये सदृशानां बन्धो भवतीति । अत्रोच्यते । द्वाधिकादिगुणानां तु द्वाधिकादिगुणानां सदृशानां बन्धो भवति । द्विगुणाद्यधिकछिग्धेन । द्विगुणाद्यधिकछिग्धस्य छिग्धेन । रूपास्यापि द्विगुणाद्यधिकरूपास्य रूपाणां । एकादिगुणाधिकयोस्तु सदृशयोर्वन्धो न भवति । अत्राह परमाणुषु सूक्ष्मेषु च ये स्पृशदयो गुणास्ते किं व्यवस्थिताः तेमु आहोस्विद्व्यवस्थिता इति । अत्रोच्यते । व्यवस्थितायुतः । परिणामात् । अत्राह द्वयोरपि यथ्यमानयोगुणवस्त्वे सति कथं परिणामो भवति इति । उच्यते । बन्धे समाधिकी पारिणामिकी । बन्धे सति समगुणस्य समगुणः परिणामका भवति । अधिकगुणो हीनस्येति ।

THE NYÁYA-VAISESHIKA CHEMICAL THEORY: A BRIEF SUMMARY.

I must content myself here with a brief and rapid sketch of the chemistry of the Nyáya-Vaisesika, which I shall elaborate in connection with the mechanics and physics of the ancient Hindus in a separate paper.

The relation of the specific characters of molecules (and higher aggregates) to the original atomic qualities is reduced in the Nyáya-Vaisesika to the following canons: (a) कार्यगुणं कारणगुणपूर्वकम् । (b) समानजातीयसंयोगः द्रव्यारम्भकः न विजातीयसंयोगः (here द्रव्य is used in a narrow technical sense, so as to exclude the quasi-compound substances); (c) उपाकनरूपरसगन्धस्पर्शपरिणामैकत्वैकपृथक्त्वगुरुत्वद्रवत्व-चेद्वेगाः कारणगुणपूर्वकाः । (d) रूपरसगन्धानुष्णस्पर्शशब्द-परिणामैकत्वैक-

पृथक्कहेहाः समानावात्मिकाः । No separate explanation is necessary, as the canons are embodied in the following exposition.

Theory of Atomic Combination.—Atoms are eternal, ultimate, indivisible, and infinitesimal.

The four kinds of Atoms are Earth, Ap, Tejas, and Vāyu atoms, possessed of characteristic mass, numerical unit, weight, fluidity (or its opposite), viscosity (or its opposite), velocity (or quantity of impressed motion—Vega); also characteristic potential colour, taste, smell, or touch, not produced by the chemical operation of heat (अपाकनरूपरसगन्धस्पर्शपरिमाणैकत्वैकपृथक्गुरुत्वद्रवत्ववेहवेगाः). Ākāśa has no atomic structure (निरवयव), and is absolutely inert (निष्क्रिय), being posited only as the substratum of sound, which is supposed to travel wave-like in the manifesting medium or vehicle of Vāyu (air). Only the other four Bhūtas unite (or disunite) in atomic or molecular forms. The orthodox view is that the presence of Earth-atoms is necessary whenever chemical transformation under the operation of heat (पाकजोत्पत्ति) takes place.

Atoms cannot exist in an uncombined state in creation (Śivāditya, *Sapta-padārthi*, *vide* commentary), where, however, it is noted that still atmospheric air is believed to be monatomic in structure, i.e. to consist of masses of atoms in a loose uncombined state (स्तिमितवायुस्तु परमाणुसमूह इव जनारब्धद्रव्यः).

The atoms may combine in one or other of the following ways:—

I. One Earth-atom, by an original tendency, unites with another to form a binary molecule (द्वगुण). In

the same way binary molecules of the other Bhūtas are formed. The atoms are possessed of an inherent Parispanda (rotary or vibratory motion), and when they unite in pairs, *so long as there is no chemical operation under the action of heat-corpuscles*, the original qualities of the atoms produce homogeneous qualities in the binary molecules.

The question as to the existence of a triad, a tetrad, a pentad, etc., of atoms is one of the moot points of the Nyāya-Vaisesika. The orthodox view is that the primordial infinitesimal particles (atoms) start with an incessant vibratory motion (अनवरतपरिस्पन्दमानापरिमितपवनादिपरमाणवाः, Raghunātha Śiromani; गतिशूलत्वात् पतच्चपदेशाः पतन्तीति, Udayana, Kusumāñjali) and an inherent impulse that drives them to unite in pairs—a sort of “monovalency,” as it were, exhausted with the formation of a binary molecule. The binary molecules now combine by threes, fours, fives, etc., to form larger aggregates as well as the variety of elementary substances, the particular collocation in any case being not only determined by physical causes, but also serving to satisfy the ends of the moral law in creation (अदृष्ट, कर्म). (अणुकैवेदुभिरारभ्यते इत्यपि नियमो, न द्वान्या । बहुयुत्वनियमः । कदाचित् त्रिभिरारभ्यते इति अणुकमित्युच्यते, कदाचित्चतुर्भिरारभ्यते कदाचित् पञ्चभिरिति यथेष्टे कल्पना । अदृष्टवशात् तथा तथा तेषां व्यूहो यथा यथा तदारब्धेषु अपरनातयो व्यज्यन्ते । अदृष्टकारिता सङ्गभावानां मूढिः।—Śrīdhara, Nyāya-Kandali, पृथिवीनिरूपणम् । Cf. Vāchaspati's report, Bhāmati, Chap. II., Pada II., Sutra 2. यदा चतुरणुकमारभते चतुर्थी अणुकानामारम्भकत्वात्।) Prasastapāda appears to have originated this view (परमाणुअणुकेषु बहुत्वसंस्था—त्रैरारभे अणुकादिलक्षणे—Prasastapāda, परिमाणनिरूपणम्); but that another

view was also maintained in the Vaisesika school is evident from the brief summary of Kanāda's system given in Utpala's commentary on the *Vṛhatsamhitā*, and this indeed also follows from Śrīdhara's admissions in the *Kandali*. On this view, also, atoms have an inherent tendency to unite; but some unite in pairs, others in triads, others in tetrads, etc. This may happen in two ways—either by the atoms falling into groups of threes, fours, etc., direct, or by the successive addition of one atom to each preceding aggregate.

A triad (*Tryanuka*), then, holds together three atoms (*Atus*), not three binary molecules (*Dvyanukas*), as on the orthodox hypothesis. Similarly with tetrads, pentads, etc. (चतुर्विधाः परमाणवः द्वितिनलाग्निवायूनाम् । इत्याद्यां परमाणुभ्यां द्व्यणुकमारभ्यते त्रिभिः परमाणुभिस्र्यणुकमारभ्यते इति क्रमेण स्थूलकार्यद्रव्यस्योत्पत्तिः ।—Utpala, Chap. I., Śloka 7; cf. also Śrīdhara's admission, अथवा यदि परमाणवो द्व्यणुकमारभ्य तत्सहितास्त्र्यणुकमारभ्यते त्र्यणुकसहितास्तु द्रव्यानन्तरम् तत्रापि कुत्रा विश्वस्य अग्रहणम्). Śaṅkara seems to speak of two binary molecules in the Vaisesika as forming a tetrad (यदापि द्वे द्व्यणुके चतुरणुकमारभ्यते—Śāriraka-Bhāṣya, Chap. II., Pada XX., Sutra 2, where the Bhāmati gives a forced interpretation).

In Prasastapāda's view, these binary molecules are grouped by threes, fours, fives, etc. (त्र्यणुक, चतुरणुक) to form different isomeric modifications. The variety of Earth substances is due to differences in the arrangements of the molecules (*e.g.* their greater or less density, and, above all, their grouping or collocation, अग्रह, अवयवसन्निवेश), which account for the specific characters (अपरिज्ञाति) manifested by these isomeric substances. सा (पृथिवी) च स्वैर्याद्यवयवसन्निवेशविशिष्टा

अपरजातिवहुत्वोपेता । — Prasastapāda, पृथिवीनिरूपणम् । स्वैर्यं निविडत्वं । आदिशब्दात् प्रशिषिलत्वादियरिग्रहः । परमाण्वादेषु अपरजात-भावेऽपि अदृश्यज्ञात् तथा तथा तेषां व्यूहः यथा यथा तदारब्धेषु अपरजातयो व्यन्यन्ते । — Śrīdhara, Kandali, *ibid.*

स्वैर्यं स्थिरता चिरकालावस्थायित्वमिति यावत् । आदियहणाद्विष्मकत्वं जलादिव्यूहविरोधित्वञ्च । अथयवसन्निवेशः तत्तत्तत्सामान्याविशेषाभिव्यञ्जकसंस्था-नविशेषाः । न हि रतदद्रव्यान्तरे सम्भवति । जलादीनां यत्किञ्चित्स्पर्शवद्-वेगवद्द्रव्योपनिपातमात्रेणैव भङ्गुरत्वात् । — Udayana, Kiranāvali, *ibid.*

These original differences in molecular grouping, leading to distinctions of genera and species, however mechanically or physically explained, come also under the operation of moral and metaphysical causes (अदृष्ट, कर्मे), i.e. of ideal ends in the moral government of the Universe, which are superimposed upon the physical order, but which do not come within the scope of Natural Philosophy. An elementary substance thus produced by primary atomic combination may, however, suffer qualitative change under the influence of heat (पाकनोत्पत्तिः). The process is as follows:—(1) The impact of heat-corpuscles decomposes the binary (tertiary, or quaternary) molecules into homogeneous atoms possessing only the generic characters of the Bhūta concerned; (2) the impacts of heat-particles continue, and transform the characters of the atoms, determining them all in the same way; (3) the heat-particles continue to impinge, and reunite the atoms so transformed to form binary (or other) molecules, in different orders or arrangements, which account for the specific characters or qualities finally produced. The Vaiśeṣhika holds that there is decomposition into homogeneous atoms, transformation of atomic qualities, and finally

re-combination, all under the influence of heat (पिलुपाक). The Nyāya, on the other hand, thinks that the molecules and larger aggregates assume the new characters under the influence of heat without decomposition into homogeneous atoms or change of atomic characters (पिठरपाक).

तेषामनुमानेन विनाशः परिकल्प्यते । सञ्जीवयवेषु अन्नवैहिथ्यं पाकपूर्वक-
पूर्वकपादिविलक्षणगुणोपलब्धेरेतःप्रवेशः कृशानोरनुमीयते तेन वेगवता यहि-
द्रव्येण नोदनात् अभिघातात् वा नूनं घटाद्यारम्भकेषु अवयवेषु क्रिया जायते
क्रियातो विभागः विभागात् द्रव्यारम्भकसंयोगविनाशः । तद्विनाशात् द्रव्य-
विनाशः । यद्वाद्य इयमादिगुणानवज्ञातः रक्तादिगुणान्तरयोगमनुभवतः—
अदृष्टप्रेष्यमाणाः परस्परं संयुज्य द्रव्यकादिप्रक्रमेण तादृशमेव घटादिकार्यमारभन्ते ।
एवं तपनात्पदृश्यमानेषु आघादिकलेषु एव एव न्यायः । शरीरे अपि उद्व्येण
तेजसा पच्यमानेषु अवयवानादिषु रसमलधातुभावेन परिणामनुपगच्छत्सु प्रायेण
प्रतिक्षणानुत्पादविनाशी संभवत इति । (Jayanta, Nyāyamañjarī,
भूतचतस्र-पूर्वपक्षः.) This is the Vaisesika view, but Jayanta
himself inclines to the opposite view: प्रकृतिमुधिरतयैव
कार्यद्रव्यस्य घटादेः चारम्भात् अन्नस्तेजःकणानुप्रवेशकृतपाकोपपत्तेः सलं
विनाशकल्पनया । पिठरपाकपक्ष एव पेपलः । *ibid.* The Nyāya
view: ये बीजावयवास्ते पूर्वव्यूहपरित्यागेन व्यूहान्तरमापद्यन्ते व्यूहान्तरापत्तौ
च पृथिवीधातुरवधातुना संगृहीतं ज्ञानरेण तेजसा पच्यमानो रसद्रव्यं निर्वर्त्तयति
स रसः पूर्वव्यूहवसहितोऽङ्कुरादिभावमापद्यते । परमाखवस्यानि बीजानि
भवन्तीत्येतच्च प्रतिपद्यामहे । यस्माच्चात्यादिवीजमुच्छूनावस्थामादि कृत्वा
यावदुपान्त्यं शालिवीजकार्यं तावच्च कदाचित् परमाखवस्य भवति । यदि
तु स्यात् कदाचित् नोपलभ्येत ।—Udyotakara, Chap. III.,
Āhnika 1, Sutra 4.

II. *Chemical Combination* (सम्भूयक्रिया, संहतक्रिया).—
Chemical combination takes place either between two or
more substances which are isomeric modifications of the
same Bhūta, or between substances which are modes of
different Bhūtas.

A. *Mono-Bhautic Compounds*.—The simplest compounds are mono-Bhautic compounds, i.e. compounds of different substances which are isomeric modes of the same Bhūta.

(a) Mono-Bhautic compounds of the first order.

Under the impact or impulse (अभिघात or नोदन) of heat-corpuscles, the substances in chemical contact (आरम्भक संयोग) break up into their atoms. These atoms are homogeneous, possessing only the original physical and chemical characters of the Bhūta concerned. As the specific differences between isomeric substances arise from the arrangement or collocation of the atoms, the substances lose their distinctive marks on decomposition into the latter. (न च परमाणुषु अपरन्तातिभेदो विद्यते न च यद्यवनिशालिवीनपरमाणूनां कश्चिद्विशेषः।—Udyotakara, Chap. III., Āhnika 1, Sutra 4.

न च शुक्रशोणितपरमाणूनां कश्चिद्विशेषः पार्थिवत्वाविशेषात्।—Śrīdhara, Nyāya-Kandali, पृथिवीनिरूपणम् ।)

Under the continued impact (or, it may be, impulse) of heat-particles (वेगवता वह्निद्रव्येण नादनात् अभिघातात् वा—Jayanta), these atoms take on new characters. It is heat, and heat alone, that can cause this transformation of the colours, tastes, smells, etc., in these original Bhūta-atoms. What particular colours, tastes, smells, or physical characters will be produced in the atoms depends (1) on the

colours, etc., of the constituent substances in contact ; (2) the intensity or degree of the heat (स्वर, नृदु, or मध्यम पाक) ; and (3) the species of Tejas-corpuscles that impinge on the atoms, or the nature of the impact (विलक्षणतेजःसंयोग). (न ब्रूमीऽग्निःसंयोगात् एकस्मात् रूपादय इति अपि तु पृथ्वीरूपादिविशेषापेक्षात् । यद्द्रव्यं पच्यते अग्निसंयोगेन तस्य ये पृथ्वीरूपादयस्तेषां यः स्वगतो विशेषस्तमपेक्षमात्रः अग्निसंयोगः उत्तरान् रूपादीन् विशिष्टानारभते । *Vide also Udyotakara, III., 2, Sutra 14. Cf. also Vāchaspati, I., 1, Sutra 4.* अस्माकमभेदे अपि उपादानस्य पिष्टरस्य चैव्यापराख्यस्य च बहिःसंयोगस्य पृथ्वीरूपादिप्रध्वनानां कारणानां भेदात् भिन्नजातीया जायन्ते गन्धरूपरसस्पर्शा इति सिद्धान्तः ।)

Now when the atoms have all been determined in the same way, they begin to re-combine again under the impact (or impulse) of the heat-particles in binary molecules (or tertiary, etc.), and these in higher aggregates. It seems to be generally held that at the final step one or more atoms of one constituent substance unite with one or more atoms of the other constituent substance or substances to form a molecule of the compound ; but the question is not of much significance for mono-Bhautic compounds of the first order, as in these cases the atoms have before this all lost their distinctive characters and become

homogeneously transformed. The compound so produced will possess the new characters of the transformed atoms, so far as taste, colour, smell, etc., are concerned, but as the molecular arrangement or structure (ब्रूह, अवयवसन्निवेश) may vary, different compound substances may result from the same components.

- (b) Mono-Bhautic compounds of higher orders. Again, mono-Bhautic compounds of the first order may chemically combine to form higher compounds, and as the ultimate Bhūta substratum is the same, the process of decomposition and re-composition will be essentially the same as before. The only doubtful point is whether in this case the component compound substances are broken up only into their constituent molecules, or into the original homogeneous Bhūta-atoms. Some of the later Vaisesika scholiasts hold that the latter happens in every case of chemical composition, however complex, but the earlier Vaisesika conceived that in the case of compounds of compounds the decomposition does not proceed so far as the original Bhūta-atoms, but that it is the specifically determined atoms constituting the molecules of the component compounds that are transformed under the impact of the heat-corpuscles; and then

one such transformed atom (one or more according to another version) from the molecule of one component unites with one similarly transformed atom (one or more according to the other version) from the molecule of the other component. Prasastapáda, the great Vaiseshika doctor, holds this view. When, for example, in the fertilised ovum, the germ and the sperm substances, which, in the Vaiseshika view, are both isomeric modes of Earth (with accompaniments of other Bhútas), unite, both are broken up into homogeneous Earth-atoms, and it is these that chemically combine under the animal heat (and biomotor Energy, वायु) to form the germ-plasm (कलल). But, next, when the germ-plasm develops, deriving its nutrition from the chyle (blood) of the mother, the animal heat breaks up the molecules of the germ-plasm into its constituent atoms (कललारम्भकपरमाणवः), i.e. into atoms specifically determined, which by their grouping formed the germ-plasm, and then these germ-plasm atoms as radicles chemically combine with the atoms of the food-constituents, and thus produce cells and tissues. (समुत्पन्नपाकनैः कललारम्भकपरमाणुभिः खट्वश्वज्ञात् उपजातक्रियैः आहारपरमाणुभिः सह सम्भूय शरीरान्तरान्तरभ्यते इत्येषा कल्पना । पितुः शुक्रं मातुः शोणितं तयोः सञ्चिप्राप्तानन्तरं

नटरानलसम्बन्धात् शुक्लशोणितारम्भकेषु परमाणुषु पृष्ठ-
रुपादिविनाशे सति समानगुणानरोत्पत्तौ अणुकादि-
प्रक्रमेण कललशरीरोत्पत्तिः । . . . तत्र मातुराहारसः
माद्यया संक्रामति चतुष्टयवशात् तत्र पुनर्नटरानलसम्बन्धात्
कललारम्भकपरमाणुषु क्रियाविभागादिन्यायेन कललशरीर-
नष्टे समुत्पन्नपाकनैः कललारम्भकपरमाणुभिः चतुष्टयवशात्
उपजातक्रियः आहारपरमाणुभिः सह सम्भूय शरीरान्तर-
मारम्भते इत्येषा कल्पना ।—Śrīdhara, Kandali,
पृथिवीनिरूपणम् ।) In this hypothesis (कल्पना)
it is assumed that the atoms are similarly
transformed, i.e. become endowed with
the colour, taste, smell, etc., of the
product (the cell or tissue) the moment
before the chemical combination takes
place. Similarly, when milk is trans-
formed into curd, one view is that the
transformation takes place (under internal
heat) in the constituent atoms of the
milk-molecules, atoms specifically deter-
mined as milk, and not in the original
atoms of the Bhūta (or Bhūtas) entering
into the composition of milk. (Cf. एवं
महादुग्धारम्भकैः परमाणुभिरेव दध्मारम्भते । एकमहिम्नेव
दध्मारम्भकैरेव परमाणुभिर्नवनोत्तारम्भः इति दिक् ।
Nyāyabodhinī, on Annam Bhatta's Tarka-
saṅgraha. Cf. Dinakari—अणुकरूपदुग्धध्वंस-
जन्यत्वेऽपि तस्य (दध्मः) ।) In these cases the
atomic contact is called constituent con-
tact (आरम्भकसंयोग), and all the atoms are
equally regarded as material causes (उपादान-
कारण or समवायिकारण) of the compound.

B. *Hetero-Bhautic "Quasi-compounds."*—The Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika maintains that in the case of bi-Bhautic (or poly-Bhautic) compounds, which are only quasi-compounds, there is another kind of contact between the heterogeneous atoms of the different Bhūtas, which may be called dynamic contact, and is distinguished in its operations as Upashtambha, Viśhtambha, or Avashtambha (उपशम्भ, विशम्भ, or अवशम्भ). In some cases it so happens that the atoms of different isomeric modes of the same Bhūta do not chemically combine under the mere application of heat; they require to be surrounded (and "excited," "energized") by atoms of different Bhūtas. For example, in the case of the oils and fats, as well as of plant saps and fruit juices, the Earth-atoms must be dissolved in water (Ap), and it is only when the water-atoms (Ap-atoms) congregate round the former that dynamic intra-atomic forces are set up, and the Earth-atoms (with the water-atoms in dynamic contact) now take on peculiar infra-sensible characters (colours, tastes, smells) under the impact of the heat-corpuscles, and then, under further impact, fall into groupings or collocations (of a very peculiar nature, to be presently explained) which determine the nature of the composite substance thus produced. Here it is the water-atoms that are dynamic (उपशम्भक), and excite the Earth-atoms, and these substances, oils and fats (तेलवर्गे and घृतवर्गे), as well as acids (अम्लवर्गे) are, because of the Earth-radicles, regarded

as Earth compounds (or Earth substances). (पाकन-तथाविधगन्धरसरूपादिमहिः परमाणुभिर्द्युष्टादिक्रमेण घृतादिद्रव्यमारभ्यते । तत्र च उपहम्भकतया निमित्ततामापन्नाः पानीयावयवाः । तेषां संपुक्कसमवायेन स्नेहस्तपोपलभ्यते । तैलक्षीरादिषु पार्थिवत्वसिद्धिः । तैलस्य भीमानलेन्यतत्वात् घृतवत् ।—Udayana.) In the above instances, Ap (water) acts as dynamic (Upashtambhaka, उपहम्भक), but Tejas and Vāyu can also act in the same way on Earth-particles. Conversely, Earth-particles may act dynamically on the atoms of the other Bhūtas. For example, in the case of mercury and the metals which are conceived in the Nyāya-Vaisesika to be igneous bodies (in fact, they are supposed to be formed under the subterranean heat, जाकरन), the Tejas-corpuscles are believed to form the radicles, and the Earth-particles are dynamic (उपहम्भक). (सुवर्णादि निरन्तरं ध्यायमानमपि न पृष्ठरूपं जहाति । तेनैव द्रव्यान्तरेण प्रतिघट्यत्वात् उपहम्भकोऽपि पार्थिवभागः सदृशरूप एवानुवर्तते, यन्तु पुटपाकादिना रक्तारक्ता दृश्यते तन्निष्ठाभूताभिभावकतत्तद्द्रव्योपगमात् । एतेन पारदादि व्याख्यातम् ।—Udayana, Kiranāvalī, तेजोनिरूपणम् । Cf. also योऽपि तेजसमिच्छति सुवर्णं तेनाप्यत्र पार्थिवोभाग उपहम्भक रहस्यः ।)

It may be here noted that Gaṅgesa, the author of the Tattvachintāmaṇi, conjectures that even gold can be evaporated or made to disappear by the application of intense heat: सद्य द्रुतद्रुततरादेः क्रमशः प्रतीतेः प्रचलानलसंयोगेन सुवर्णेनाज्ञात् तद्द्रवता नश्यति । But Mathurānātha notes here : भस्मप्राक्कालोच्चेदसमये । (सन्निकर्षेणादरहस्य).

But while every Bhūta can act dynamically

अऽपहम्भक, "energizer," "exciter," it is the Earth Bhūta alone which is capable of exercising (1) the power of arrest or inhibition of molecular motion, or the motion of particles due to gravity as in fluids (Vishṭambha, विष्टम्भ); or (2) the power of counteracting the tendency in a given set of atoms to fall into a peculiar order or group (ब्यूहविरोधित्वम्). (न च पार्थिववत् अम्भो द्रव्यानन्तरं गच्छद्विष्टम्भानि पृथिव्यूर्ध्वं वा विरुणद्धि।—Udayana, Kiranāvalī, पृथिवी-निरूपणम्। विष्टम्भकत्वं स्वाभाविकगुरुत्वात्पदद्रव्यानन्तरगतिप्रतिबन्धकत्वम्। ब्यूहविरोधित्वं च स्वाभाविकगुरुत्ववत्पतनप्रतिबन्धकत्वम्।—Vardhamāna, Kiranāvalīprakāśa, *ibid.*)

Oils, Fats, Milks.—Bi-Bhautic quasi-compounds, with Ap as energizer: Oleaginous substances (आज्यतैलादयः चेहाः) are divided by Udayana into (1) oils derived from vegetables, (2) butters derived from milk, and (3) fats derived from animals. The medical schools, as we have seen, recognise animal oils as distinguished from vegetable oils. Vegetable fats (*e.g.* विदङ्गपूत) are also mentioned. Vāchaspati and Udayana contend that among oils, fats, milks, etc., differences in flavour and odour imply differences in kind (ज्ञाति) and in molecular structure, since it is only a variation in such structure that constitutes a variation in natural kind (अवयव-संविशेषः—तत्तत्कानामन्यविशेषाभिप्यन्नकसंस्थानविशेषाः—Udayana, Kiranāvalī). Mustard-oil, for example, has not the flavour and smell characteristic of sesamum-oil (Taila), and is classed with the latter only by reason of similarity of specific qualities and structure. Judged by the flavour test, Āmikshā (the casein substance formed by mixing milk curd with hot boiled milk) is to be classed with

milk substances. So also Takra, whey; but Vājina, the thin fluid that is left after the Āmikshā (casein substance) is separated, cannot be classed as milk. It may be added that the milks and curds, as well as oils and fats derived from different species of vegetables or animals, are supposed to differ in their ultimate structural arrangement, and therefore in kind; but Vallabha thinks that the ghees (clarified butters) prepared from different kinds of milk are of the same kind; in other words, the milks and curds are "polymeric," the ghees (clarified butters) "isomeric," using these terms, as before, in a loose general sense. (. . . तैलघृतवसानां योजनद्वयोरमांसयोनित्वात् । अतएव नारिकेल-
लघ्वेहस्यापि तैलत्वं रसादिमाकष्यादपि तु घृतव्यपदेशश्च ।—Udayana, Kiranāvali, पृथिवीनिरूपणम् । Vallabha notes that ghees do not differ in kind as milks (and curds) do: अतः माहिषगव्यादिदुग्धेषु दधिज्वत् घृतादिषु जातिभेदेष्टव्यमस्तीति चेन्न ।—Vallabha, Lilāvati. Compare Vāchaspati, II., 2, 65: आन्यतैलादीनां जातिस्तु गन्धेन वा रसेन वा व्यज्यते । अतएव न मांसपादीनां तैलत्वमस्ति । तद्व्यञ्जकयोग्यं रसयोरभावात् । भास्वस्तु तैलशब्द-
योगः । द्यौरजातिरपि रसव्यञ्जकः । अतएवामिच्छायाः द्यौरत्वम् । न तु वाजिनस्य तद्व्यञ्जकस्य रसभेदस्य वाजिने अभावात् आमिच्छाया च भावात् ।)

III. *Mixtures like Solutions, etc.*—A solution (of an Earth substance in Ap or water) is a physical mixture of a peculiar kind, from which evaporation (or precipitation) ordinarily sets the water free. Udyotakara notices gruels, baths, and lyes (alkaline solutions) as mixtures of this class (इतेन पाककाञ्चिकविवेकावधारणायः प्रयुक्ताः—Udyotakara). A soup is also a physical mixture. When meat is boiled in water there is the

application of heat with chemical changes in the meat, but the combination of meat particles and water particles in the soup is only physical combination and not a chemical one. It is, of course, not a true compound, neither is it a quasi-compound like milk (in which the water particles are "energizers" of the Earth particles). Milk, for example, retains its milky substance when it coagulates or becomes solid (this, of course, is also the case with mono-Bhautic substances whether elementary or compound, *e.g.* water, which becomes ice), but the substance we call a soup or solution ceases to be a soup or solution the moment it solidifies. (यूयो हि नाम उत्पन्नपाकज्ञानां द्रव्याणां कालविशेषानुसृष्टे सति द्रव्यानन्तरसंपृक्तानां पाकनोत्पत्ती यः संयोगः स घृष इति । स्तेन पाककाष्ठिकविवेकावधारदयः प्रत्युक्ताः ।—Udyotakara, Vārtika, Chap. I, Āhnika 1, Sutra 14. *Vide* also Vāchaspati's comment: उत्पन्नपाकज्ञानां तैले सर्पिषि वा पिहर्मासपिच्छाद्ययवानां द्रव्यानन्तरेण तोयेन संपृक्तानां पाकनोत्पत्ती सत्या न चासी सहसा इत्युक्तं कालविशेषानुसृष्टे सतीति । स च संयोगभेदएव तोयनासयोर्नेतु अवयवौ विजातीययोरनारम्भकत्वात् । नापि घृषज्ञातीयं तोयसंयोगि द्रव्यं क्षीरजातीय-निवेति मुक्तम् । तोयविरहे काठिन्येपि क्षीरबुद्धिष्वपदेशयोस्तादवस्थ्यात् । इह तु काठिन्ये न घृषबुद्धिष्वपदेशी इति सम्बन्धभेद एव तोयनासयोर्येष इति न्याय्यम् । स च अनुभवसिद्धः संयोगिष्यतिरिक्तः ।—Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatikā, *ibid.* For earthy salts in sea-water, *vide* Kiranāvalī: यत् पुनरम्बुधिसिन्धुभेदेन क्षारादिरपि रसः पाचसे उपलभ्यते स दशमूलकषायस्येव पार्थिवद्रव्योपाधिकः । कषणमन्यथा तस्यैव घनघातनुकूल्य रसो मधुर एव ।—Udayana, Kiranāvalī, जलनिरूपणम् ।)

Chemical Action and Heat.—The operation of heat is of course universally implied in chemical combinations. Where the application of external heat is

wanting, Vātsyāyana, the great doctor of the Nyāya, points to the operation of internal heat (*e.g.* पृथिवीधातुः स्वधातुना संगृहीतः ज्वान्तरेण तेजसा पच्यमानः रसद्रव्यं निर्वहेत्यति ।— Vātsyāyana-Bhāshya, Chap. IV., Āhnika 1, Sutra 47). In the case of combustion we have seen Vijñāna-bhikṣhu explain the heat as latent in the Earth substance, the fuel, from which it breaks forth. Udayana points out that the solar heat is the source of all the stores of heat required for chemical change in the world. The change of colours in grasses, for example, is due to Tejas in the form of latent (invisible) heat, not in the form of Agni; and the cold in winter cannot take away this store derived from the sun. (तृणादिविकारो हि यदि रूपादिपरावृत्तिमात्रहेतुः स नूनमीष्यपेक्षेण तेजसा कर्तव्यः । तादृशं च पाके अनिमित्तं हिममिति । न किञ्चिदनिष्टमापद्यते । न हि सौरस्य तेजसः वैलोक्यपाकहेतोर्हिमादपगमः क्षमते । अथ विकारो भस्मादिरूपो विवक्षितः सोऽस्मिन्नस्य हिमहेतेषु तृणादिषु क्व विरोधो बाधो वा । अथ रूपादिपरावृत्तिमात्रेणैव अग्निः साध्यते तदशक्यम् । तस्य दर्शनस्पर्शन-यादिस्य योग्यानुपलम्भबाधितत्वात् अतादृशस्य तेजोमात्रस्य निवृत्तेरशक्यत्वात् अनिष्टत्वात् च ।—Udayana, Kiranāvalī, मृष्टिसंहारविधिभिरुपपन्नम् ।) Similarly it is under this solar heat that the unripe mango ripens, *i.e.* changes colour, taste, smell, etc., showing that there is chemical transformation or subtile decomposition and recombination going on; and this is also the case with the rusting of the metals, which is a combustion due to the solar heat (सूर्यपाक) even as the conversion of food into chyle and of chyle into blood are instances of chemical action due to the internal animal heat (जठरानल or औदर्यं तेजः). But the kind of contact with heat-corpuscles, in other words, the kind of chemical action (पाक) which transforms colours, is

supposed to differ from that which transforms flavour (विलक्षणतेजःसंयोग and पाक), and this last from that which produces a change of smell, or tactile quality. (पाको नाम विजातीयतेजःसंयोगः । स च नानाजातीयः । रूपजनको विजातीयतेजःसंयोगस्तदपेक्षया रसजनको विजातीयः । एवं स्पृशोदी अपि तथा । सर्वप्रकारेण भिन्नभिन्नजातीयाः पाकाः कार्यवैलक्षण्येन कल्पनीयाः । तथाहि तृणपुष्प-निक्षिप्ताम्नादी उष्णलघुविजातीयतेजःसंयोगात् पृष्ठहरितरूपनाश रूपान्तरस्य पीतादेरुत्पत्तिः पृष्ठरसस्य खल्लस्यैवानुभवात् । क्वचित् पृष्ठहरितरूपसंस्पर्शेऽपि रसपरावृत्तिर्दृश्यते विजातीयतेजःसंयोगरूपपाकवशात् पृष्ठतनाग्ररसनाशे मधुर-रसस्यानुभवात् । तस्माद्रूपजनकापेक्षया रसजनको विलक्षण एवं गन्धजनको विलक्षण स्याद्भौतिक्यैः रूपरसयोरपरावृत्तौ अपि पृष्ठगन्धनाशे विजातीयपाकवशात् मुरभिगन्धोपलभेः । एवं स्पृशजनकोऽपि पाकवशात् कटिनस्पर्शनाशे मृदुस्पर्शानुभवात् । अतएव पार्थिवपरमाणूनामेकजातीयत्वेऽपि पाकमहिम्ना विजातीयद्रव्यान्तरानुभवः । यथा गोमुक्तुखादीनां चापरनाश्वने भक्षे तृणारम्भकपरमाणुं विजातीयतेजःसंयोगवशात् पृष्ठरूपादिचतुष्टयनाशे तदनन्तरं दुग्धे पादुशं रूपादिकं वर्जते तादृशरूपरसगन्धस्पर्शजनकासेजःसंयोगा जायते । तदुत्तरं तादृशरूपाद्य उत्पद्यते । तादृशरूपादिविशिष्टपरमाणुभिर्दुग्धद्रव्यकुमारम्भते । ततः त्र्यणुकादिक्रमेण महादुग्धारम्भइति ।—Nyāyabodhini on Annam Bhatta's Tarkasaṅgraha.) Heat- and light-rays are supposed to consist of indefinitely small particles which dart forth or radiate in all directions rectilineally with a sort of conical dispersion and with inconceivable velocity. They may either (1) penetrate through inter-atomic (or inter-molecular) spaces as in cases of conduction of heat, which when applied under the pot boils the water or fries the paddy, where there is no chemical action in the pot, no decomposition and recomposition of its atoms, no change in the molecular collocation; or, as with light-rays in cases of translucency or transparency (सञ्चलता), penetrate through the inter-atomic spaces with Parispanda of the nature of

deflection or refraction (तिय्यैगुगमन, Udyotakara), in the same way as when fluids penetrate through porous bodies (तत्र परिस्पन्दः तिय्यैगुगमनं परिस्रवः पात इति—Udyotakara, commenting on Vātsyāyana's परिस्पन्दपरिस्रवौ, Sutra 47, Āhnika 1, Chap. III.); or (2) impinge on the atoms, and rebound back—which explains reflection (मृत्त्येन, किरणविषट्ठन—Varāhamihira, रश्मिपरावर्त्तेन—Vātsyāyana), or otherwise be obstructed by the atoms in their path, which would explain degrees of opacity, the casting of shadows, etc., all these operations being also physical, and unattended by decomposition and recombination or alteration of molecular grouping; or (3) lastly, strike the atoms in a peculiar way, so as to break up their grouping, transform the physico-chemical characters of the atoms, and again recombine them, all by means of continual impact with inconceivable velocity, an operation which explains all cases of chemical combination. (सचिन्त्यो हि तेजसो लावघातिशयेन वेगातिशयः यत् प्राचीनाचलचूडावलम्बिनि एव भगवति मयूखमालिनि भवनोदरेषु आलोकद्वयभिमानो लौकिकानाम् ।—Udayana, Kiranāvali, तेजोनिरूपणम्, taken from Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatikā, प्रत्यक्षलक्षणमुच्यते । Cf. also चाक्षुषं तेजः वेगपता साविचेन तेजसा न प्रतिहन्यते ।—Vāchaspati. चर्त्तिद्वेजे पिष्टितमपि तेजः प्रसर्पत् प्रासादोदरं व्याप्नोति । तत् कस्य हेतोः पृथग्यन्तात् । स्वभावतः प्रसरदपि न स्वपरिनाशानुविधायिनं प्राययमाधत्ते किं तु विषयभेदानुविधायिनम् ।—*ibid.* Cf. स्फटिकाद्यनरितोपलब्धधिरपि प्रसादस्वभावतया स्फटिकादीनां तेजोगतैरप्रतिवन्धकतया प्रदीपप्रभावादेवोपपत्ता ।—Udayana, तेजोनिरूपणम्, in reply to the objection: यदि हि प्राप्य गृहीयात् प्रतिघातिना स्फटिकद्रव्येण विहम्भादप्राप्तं प्रसर्पवृत्त्यादिकं नाददीत तस्मादप्राप्यकारि ततो न तेजसम् ।—Udayana, *ibid.* Definition of सञ्ज्ञता—द्रव्यान्तरा-सम्पृक्तद्रव्यसमवायः सञ्ज्ञता । दृष्ट्याप्रतीयातः काचाधपटलस्फटिकानरितो-पलब्धः । स्यात्वादिषु च पाचकस्य तेजसाप्रतीयातात् ।—Udyo-

takara, Chap. III., Áhnika 1, Sutra 38. चादित्यरश्मेः स्फटिकान्तरितेऽपि दाक्षेऽविषातात् ।—Sutra 47, where Udyotakara notes: कोऽयमविषातः—यस्य द्रव्यस्यावयवा न व्यूह्यन्ते तस्य अन्तरावयवैः व्यूह्यमानस्य योऽभिसम्बन्धः सोऽविषात इति । Vāchaspati explains यस्य द्रव्यस्य भर्जनकपालादेः अवयवा न व्यूह्यन्ते पृष्ठोत्पन्नद्रव्यारम्भकसंयोगनाशेन द्रव्यान्तरजनकसंयोगोत्पादने व्यूहनं तत्र क्रियन्ते तस्य द्रव्यस्य भर्जनकपालादे-रव्यूह्यमानस्य अन्तरावयवैर्योऽभिसम्बन्धो बहेः सोऽप्रतिषातः । Cf. Vātsyāyana on Sutra 47, Áhnika 1, Chap. III. On the other hand, in chemical combination, अन्नःप्रवेशः कृशानोरनुमीयते । तेन येगवता बहिद्रव्येण नौदनात् अभिषातात् वा अवयवेषु क्रिया, क्रियातो विभागः, विभागात् आरम्भकसंयोगविनाशः etc.—Jayanta, Mañjarī, भूतचैतन्यपृष्ठपक्षः । For opacity, shadows, etc., *vide* ज्ञाया तु तेनःपरमाणोरावरणात् भूतैर्नना परमाणुना तेनःपरमाणुराव्रियते । यच्च च अस्य चावरणं तत्र ज्ञायेति । विरलतेजःसम्बन्धीनि द्रव्यगुणकर्मणि ज्ञाया इत्यभिधीयते । सर्वतो व्यापृक्ततेजःसम्बन्धीनि तु तानि तनःसंज्ञकानि ।—Udyotakara, Chap. IV., Áhnika 2, Sutra 25. For reflection and its laws, I quote passages in my Paper on Hindu Physics, to which the student of the history of Optics is referred.)

Arrangement of Atoms in Space.—The Nyāya conceives atomic magnitudes as Párimándalya, a term which indicates a spherical shape. (निर्बं परिमण्डलम्—परिमण्डलमेव पारिमाख्यम्—Sāṅkaramisra). To conceive position in space, Vāchaspati takes three axes, one proceeding from the point of sunrise in the horizon to that of sunset, on any particular day (roughly speaking, from the east to the west); a second bisecting this line at right angles on the horizontal plane (roughly speaking, from the north to the south); and the third proceeding from the point of their section up to the meridian position of the sun on that day (roughly

speaking, up and down). The position of any point in space, relatively to another point, may now be given by measuring distances along these three directions, *i.e.* by arranging in a numerical series the intervening points of contact, the less magnitude or distance being that which comes earlier in this series, and the greater that which comes later. The position of any single atom in space with reference to another may be indicated in this way with reference to the three axes. But this gives only a geometrical analysis of the conception of three-dimensioned Space, though it must be admitted in all fairness that by dint of clear thinking it anticipates in a rudimentary manner the foundations of solid (co-ordinate) geometry. (एकत्वेऽपि दिशः आदिबोद्धयदेश-प्रत्यासन्नदेशसंयुक्तो यः स इतरस्माद्विप्रकृष्टप्रदेशसंयोगात् परमाणोः पूर्वेः एवमादित्यास्तनयदेशप्रत्यासन्नदेशसंयुक्तो यः स इतरस्माद्विप्रकृष्टप्रदेशसंयोगात् परमाणोः पश्चिमः ती च पूर्वेपश्चिमी परमाणू अपेक्ष्य यः सूर्योदयास्तनयदेश-विप्रकृष्टप्रदेशसंयोगः स मध्यवर्त्तिः। एवमेतयोर्धौ त्रिव्यगृहेशसम्बन्धिनौ मध्यस्य आर्त्तवेन व्यवस्थितौ पार्श्ववर्त्तिनौ ती दक्षिणोत्तरी परमाणू। एवं मध्यन्दिन-वर्त्तिसूर्यसन्निकर्षविप्रकर्षौ अपेक्ष्य उपर्यधोभावो दृश्यः। संयुक्तसंयोगात्पत्य-भूयस्त्वे च सन्निकर्षविप्रकर्षौ पूर्वेसंस्थावन्निवृत्तत्वं च अत्यन्तं परसंस्थापन्नवृत्तत्वं च भूयस्त्वन्।—Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatīkā, Chap. IV., Āhnika 2, Sutra 25.)

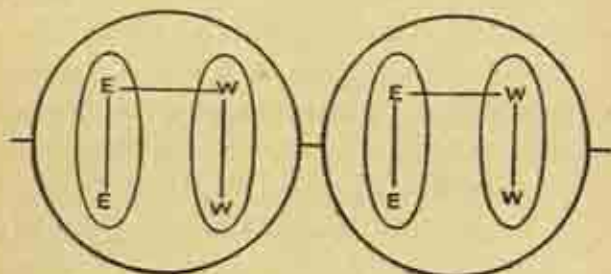
The original physical arrangement of atoms is also given. Each (spherical) atom is in contact with six other atoms. एवं दिशोऽपि एकस्या अपि संयोगा एव भागाः सोऽयं परमाणोः षट्केन युगपदयोगो नृत्तैलमात्रप्रयुक्तः न सावयवत्वप्रयुक्तः।—*ibid.* Cf. also the objection in the Buddhist Kārikā, षट्केन युगपदयोगे परमाणोः बहुंशता। यत्नी समानदेशत्वे पिष्टः स्यादशुभावकः॥ This is the typical primordial arrangement, and variations in the collocation of atoms and molecules (चूड, अवयवसन्निवेश),

as we have seen, were conceived to account for the variety of isomeric modes of the same Bhûta, as well as of mono-Bhautic and poly-Bhautic compounds.

The molecular arrangement in the case of bi-Bhautic compounds is very peculiar. Two substances, say Earth and Ap (water), form a quasi-compound first, and each substance breaks up into atoms; one atom of Earth comes into contact with one of Ap. But the two do not form a binary molecule. Instead, this contact of heterogeneous atoms leads to a curious result. The atom of Earth combines with a neighbouring atom of its own class, and forms a binary molecule. Simultaneously the atom of Ap combines with another Ap-atom, and forms a binary molecule. Now the first binary molecule links on to the atom of Ap, and similarly the second binary molecule links on to the atom of Earth. The moment after, the two binary molecules take on the physico-chemical characters of Earth and Ap respectively, and simultaneously with the assumption of these physico-chemical characters, the binary molecules enter into complex contact (संयोगनसंयोग). In all this process work is done only in the first instant, in the contact of an atom of Earth with one of Ap; the resulting contacts, of atom with binary molecule and of the binary molecules with each other, involve no further expenditure of Energy. Thus we get a particle holding two binary molecules (of Earth and Ap respectively) in complex contact, and such particles continue to be formed. In this way the particles of the two substances arrange themselves, and the peculiarity of this molecular arrangement explains the resulting mixed or compound qualities

of this class of quasi-compounds. (संयोगनस्तु (संयोगः) उत्पन्नमात्रस्य चिरोत्पन्नस्य वा निष्क्रियस्य कारणसंयोगिकारणः कारणाकारणसंयोगपूर्वकः कार्यकार्यगतः संयोगः । . . . एकस्माच्च द्वयोस्तत्पत्तिः । ऊधन् । यदा पार्थिववाय्वयोरखोः संयोगे सति अन्येन पार्थिवेन पार्थिवस्य अन्येन आप्तेन च वाय्वस्य युगपत्संयोगो भवतस्तदा ताभ्यां संयोगाभ्यां पार्थिववाय्वद्वयुके युगपदारभ्यते । ततो यस्मिन् काले द्वयुक्तयोः कारणगुणपूर्वक्रमेण रूपास्तुतिः तस्मिन्नेव काले इतरेतरकारणाकारणगतात् संयोगात् इतरेतरकार्यकार्यगती संयोगी युगपदुत्पद्यते । किं कारणम् । कारणसंयोगिना हि सकारणेन कार्यं चक्षुर्यं संयुज्यते इति न्यायः । अतः पार्थिवं द्वयुक्तं कारणसंयोगिना आप्तेन अणुना सम्बध्यते । वाय्वनपि द्वयुक्तं कारणसंयोगिना पार्थिवेनेति—Prasastapāda-Bhāṣhya, गुणग्रन्थे संयोगनिरूपणम् ।)

The whole process may be graphically represented as follows :—



MOLECULES OF A BI-BIATOMIC QUASI-COMPOUND :

GRAPHIC FORMULA OF COMPLEX CONTACT.

E = an atom of Earth.	W = an atom of water (Ap).
$\begin{array}{c} E \\ \\ W \end{array}$ = { a binary molecule of Earth.	$\begin{array}{c} W \\ \\ W \end{array}$ = { a binary molecule of water (Ap).

I will conclude this account of ancient (and mediæval) Hindu chemistry with a note on the conception of molecular (atomic) motion, Parispanda, and the different varieties of such motion which were conceived to account for the physical phenomena of sound, light, and heat. Any attempt to differentiate

rigidly between Mechanics and Physics on the one hand and Chemistry on the other at this primitive stage would be an idle affectation. My Paper on Hindu Mechanics and Physics will give a detailed exposition in a separate treatise.

PARISPANDA :—RESOLUTION OF ALL PHYSICAL
ACTION INTO MOTION.

Parispanda sometimes stands for motion molar as well as molecular, but more often for the subtile motion of atoms or molecules. The radical meaning of the term is whirling or rotary motion, a circling motion, but it may also include simple harmonic motion (*e.g.* vibration). All action, operation, work (क्रिया, व्यापार) is ultimately traced to this form of subtile motion lodged in the atoms or in the matter-stuff. The Vedānta, for example, speaks of a cosmic vibratory motion (सर्वलोकपरिस्पन्दनम्—Sāṅkara). Ākāśa, in the Vedānta, as we have seen, is the first stadium in the evolution of Matter, which gives off Vāyu, which gives off Tejas, and so on; but Ākāśa (ether) itself passes through two stages before the emanation of the Sūkshma-bhūta Vāyu: (1) the motionless ubiquitous primordial matter-stuff (answering to the Sāṅkhya Bhūtādi) called Purāṇam Kham (पुराणं खं); and (2) a subtile integration, the pure un-quintuplicated Sūkshma Bhūta called Vāyuram Kham (वायुरं खं), answering to the Sāṅkhya Tanmātra stage. It is this subtile Ākāśa, in its Tanmātric integration, *i.e.* in the derivative form, which is subject to an incessant Parispanda. The gaseous stage of matter (the Vedāntic Vāyu) is indeed

matter in a state of Parispandic motion (वायोः परिस्पन्दात्मकत्वात्—Sāṅkara). So also the biomotor and sensorimotor principles apart from the directive intelligence of the Self (प्राणस्य परिस्पन्दात्मकत्वादेव—पदद्वैतम् स्पूलं मूलाच्च तत्सङ्गं मनःस्पन्दितमात्रम्—Sāṅkara). The Sāṅkhya also conceives this Parispanda to characterise every process and phenomenon of cosmic evolution (व्यक्तं सत्क्रियं परिस्पन्दवत्—Vāchaspati, Kaumudī). Bhūtas, organisms, mental organs, as modes of Prakṛiti (considered apart from the Intelligence of Puruṣa) are all subject to this Parispanda (पुष्पादयो देहं त्वनने देहानरं उपाददते इति तेषां परिस्पन्दः । शरीरपृथिव्यादीनां च परिस्पन्दः प्रसिद्ध एव ।—Vāchaspati on Kārikā 10). On the other hand, Prakṛiti as the Avyakta, the a-cosmic, the un-manifest ground, with resolution only of like to like (सदृशपरिणाम), is devoid of all Parispandic motion (यद्यपि अव्यक्तस्यापि परिणामलक्षणा क्रिया, तथापि परिस्पन्दो नास्ति ।—*ibid.* on Kārikā 10). The Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika finds Parispanda in all forms of matter, except Ākāśa, which in that system is non-atomic and incapable of any change or activity (निश्चिद्य). But all atoms, from those of Vāyu downwards, are in incessant motion. The world at bottom is an infinitude of continually whirling (or vibratory) particles (अनवरतपरिस्पन्दमानापरिमितपवनादिपरमाणवः—Raghunātha; compare also Udayana-Kusumāñjali, Stavaka V.—परमाणवः हि गतिशीलत्वात् पतन्व्यपदेशः पतन्तीति ।). All physical action consists in motion. The Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika rejects force, power, operation (शक्ति) except as modes of motion. Jayanta, indeed, states: We do not acknowledge any mysterious power or operation which the senses do not and cannot report to us. But this denial of Force (शक्ति) and of

unperceived and unperceivable operation (चतुर्नद्रियव्यापार) is put forward as a philosophical (epistemological and metaphysical) proposition to justify the Nyāya analysis of the causal *nexu*s into mere invariable and unconditional antecedence among phenomena without productive power or efficiency (अन्यथासिद्धिज्ञानस्य नियतपृष्ठवर्तिता—Bhāṣhā-Parichehḥeda). It is not, of course, intended to question the existence of Parispanda, which is of the nature of motion, and which, though subtile and therefore infra-sensible (सूक्ष्म and अनुद्भूतरूप, not चतुर्नद्रिय), is the ultimate form of all physical activity. (परिस्पन्द एव भौतिको व्यापारः करोत्यर्थः । चतुर्नद्रियसु व्यापारः नास्तीति ब्रूमहे । . . . तस्मात् कारकचक्रेण चलता जन्यते फलम् । न पुनश्चलनादन्यो व्यापार उपलभ्यते ।—Jayanta, Nyāyamañjari, Āhnika 1.) The effect (no less than the action) is, in all cases of material causation, the resultant of the combined motions of the various (material and efficient) causes involved (*e.g.* in the case of पाक, समुदितदेयदत्तादिसकलकारकनिकरपरिस्पन्द एव विशिष्टफलावच्छिन्नः पाक इत्युच्यते । . . . अथ व्यापार एवैवः सर्वः संभूय साध्यते । किं फलेनापराद्धं चः तद्धि संभूय साध्यताम् ।—Jayanta, Nyāyamañjari, Āhnika 1.)

But, in the Nyāya-Vaisheshika, though all action of matter on matter is thus resolved into motion, conscious activity is sharply distinguished from all forms of motion, as against the Sāṅkhya-Vedānta, which, as we have seen, considered everything other than Intelligence, the Purusha or the transcendental Self, to arise in the course of cosmic evolution, and therefore to be subject to Parispandic motion. (क्रियाविशेष एवायं व्यापारो जातुराकारः । स्पन्दान्मकवर्हिर्भूतक्रियालक्षणविलक्षणः ।—Quoted in Jayanta's Nyāyamañjari, Āhnika 4.)

ADDENDA.

EMPIRICAL RECIPES FROM VARÁHAMIHIRA (circa 550 A.D.)
RELATING TO CHEMICAL TECHNOLOGY.

A. Searing of hard rocks to enable them to be cut (or pulverised) (शिलादारण).

Sprinkle on the rock taken red-hot from the fire of Palasa and Tinduka wood (*Butea Frondosa* and *Diospyros Embryopteris*):—(a) diluted milk, or (b) a solution of wood ashes (the ashes of the *Mokshaka* mixed with those of reeds), or (c) a decoction of (the fruit of) the jujube (*Zizyphus Jujuba*) kept standing for seven nights in a mixture of whey, vinegar, and spirits, in which Kulattha (*Dolichos Uniflorus* or *Biflorus*) has been steeped, or (d) a solution of the ashes of the Neema bark and leaves (*Azadirachta Indica*), the sesame-pod, the resinous fruit of the *Diospyros Embryopteris*, and the Guduchi (*Tinospora Cordifolia*), with cow's urine. Repeat the process seven times (in the last case six times).—(Varáhamihira, *Vrihat Samhitá*, Chap. XXXIII, Ślokas 112–117.)

B. Hardening of steel (शस्त्रपान).

(1) Plunge the steel red-hot into a solution of plantain ashes in whey, kept standing for twenty-four hours; then sharpen on the lathe.

(2) Make a paste with the juice of the Arka (*Calotropis Gigantea*), the gelatine from the horn of the sheep, and the dung of the pigeon and the mouse;

apply it to the steel after rubbing the latter well with (sesame) oil. Plunge the steel thus treated into fire; and when it is red-hot, sprinkle on it water, or the milk of the horse (or the camel or the goat), or ghee (clarified butter), or blood, or fat or bile. Then sharpen on the lathe.—(Varāhamihira, *सङ्गलक्षणम्*, Chap. XLIX., Ślokas 23–26.)

C. Preparation of cements (for rocks, metals, etc.) (*वचलेप*).

Varāhamihira gives the following recipes among others:—

(1) First, prepare a levigated powder with lac, the resinous exudation of the *Pinus Devadara*, the *Balsamodendron Mukal*, the *Feronia Elephantum*, the kernel of the fruit of the *Ægle Marmelos* (the *bel*), the *Diospyros Embryopteris*, the *Neem* (*Azadirachta Indica*), the *Mhow* (*Bassia Latifolia*), the Indian madder (*Rubia Manjistha*), the *Phyllanthus Emblica*, and the resin of the *Sala* tree (*Shorea Robusta*); then make a decoction of this in 256 *Palas* of water reduced by boiling to 32 *Palas*, and apply the decoction hot.

(2) The horns of cows, buffaloes, and goats, asses' hair, buffaloes' skin, with *gavya* (cow's urine, etc.), the *Neem* (*Azadirachta Indica*), and the *Feronia Elephantum*, similarly treated.

(3) A mixture of eight parts of lead, two of "bell-metal," and one of brass, melted and poured hot (*Maya's cement*).

The first, it will be seen, has lac, gum, and turpentine as principal ingredients; the second makes use of gelatine; and the third is a metallic cement.

D. Nourishment of Plants (from Varāhamihira, Chap. LIV., on वृक्षावुद्भेद).

The most suitable ground to plant in is soft soil that has been sown with the *Sesamum Indicum*, and dug up or trodden over with the sesame in flower. Grafts should be smeared with cow-dung. For transplanting, the plants should be smeared with ghee (clarified butter), sesame oil, the honey of the *Kshudra* variety of the bee, the oil of the *Usira* (*Andropogon Laniger* or *Andropogon Citrarum*), the *Vidanga* (*Embelia Ribes*), milk, and cow-dung. Trees should be planted at intervals of 20 or 16 cubits.

As a sort of general prophylactic, mud kneaded with ghee (clarified butter) and *Vidanga* (*Embelia Ribes*) should be applied to the roots, after which milk diluted with water should be poured. As a remedy against barrenness a hot decoction should be made of *Kulattha* (*Dolichos Uniflorus* or *Biflorus*), *Masha* (*Phaseolus Roxburghii*), *Mudga* (*Phaseolus Mungo*), *Tila* (*Sesamum Indicum*), and *Yava* (barley), which, when cooled, should be poured round the roots.

To promote inflorescence and fructification, a mixture of one *Ādhaka* (64 *Palas*) of sesame, two *Ādhakas* (128 *Palas*) of the excreta of goat or sheep, one *Prastha* (16 *Palas*) of barley powder, one *Tula* (100 *Palas*) of beef, thrown into one *Drona* (256 *Palas*) of water, and standing over for seven nights, should be poured round the roots of the plant. The measures given are for one plant.

To ensure inflorescence, etc., the seed before being sown should be treated as follows:—The seeds should

be taken up in the palm greased with ghee (clarified butter) and thrown into milk; on the day following the seeds should be taken out of the milk with greased fingers and the mass separated into single seeds. This process is to be repeated on ten successive days. Then the seeds are to be carefully rubbed with cow-dung, and afterwards steamed in a vessel containing the flesh of hogs or deer. Then the seeds are to be sown with the flesh, with the fat of hogs added, in a soil previously prepared by being sown with sesame and dug up or trodden down.

To ensure the formation of *Ballaris* (*i.e.* sprouting and the growth of luxuriant stems and foliage), the seeds should be properly soaked in an infusion of powdered paddy, *Masha* (bean), sesame, and barley, mixed with decomposing flesh, and then steamed with *Haridrā* (turmeric). This process will succeed even with the *Tintidī* (*Tamarindus Indica*). For the *Kapittha* (*Feronia Elephantum*), the seeds should be soaked for about two minutes (*lit.* such length of time as it would take one to make a hundred rhythmic claps with the palms—*नलशब्द*) in a decoction of eight roots (*Āsphota*, *Āmalaki*, *Dhava*, *Vāsika*, *Vetasa*, *Suryyavalli*, *Syāma*, and *Atimukta*, *i.e.* the jasmine, the myrobalan, the *Grislea Tomentosa*, the *Justicia Ganderussa*, the *Calamus Rotang*, the *Gymandropsis Pentaphylla*, the *Echites Frutescens*, and the *Dalbergia Oujeinensis*) boiled in milk. The seeds should then be dried in the sun. This process should be repeated for thirty days. A circular hole should be dug in the ground, a cubit in diameter and two cubits deep, and this should be filled

with the milky decoction. When the hole dries up, it should be burnt with fire, and then pasted over with ashes mixed with ghee and honey. Three inches of soil should now be thrown in, then the powder of bean, sesame, and barley, then again three inches of soil. Finally, washings of fish should be sprinkled, and the mud should be beaten and reduced to a thick consistency, then the seed previously prepared should be placed in the hole under three inches of soil, and fish-washings poured. This will lead to luxuriant ramification and foliage, which will excite wonder. The *Agnipurāna* adds that the mango is specially benefited by cold fish-washings (महस्योदकेन शरीरेन चाद्यानां मेकः इत्यत्रे—वृक्षागुर्वेद, *Agnipurāna*). It will be seen that these elaborate recipes are empirical contrivances for supplying the requisite nitrogen compounds, phosphates, etc., these being potentially contained in the mixtures and infusions prescribed.

CHAPTER II.

HINDU IDEAS ON MECHANICS (KINETICS).

SECTION I.

ANALYSIS OF MOTION.

IN his Bhāṣya¹ on the Vaiśeṣika¹ Aphorisms, written probably in the third or fourth century of the Christian era, if not earlier, Prāśastapāda begins the Section on Motion (कर्मव्यवस्था) with the definition of *karma* (motion, *lit.* work) as the unconditional cause of conjunction and disjunction, *i.e.* of change of place in a particle (संयोगविभागनिरपेक्षकारणं). He regards *karma* (motion) as instantaneous (क्षणिक) in its simplest form, distinguishing it from *vega* (impressed motion, momentum), which is a persistent tendency, Sanskāra, and implies a series of motions. Accordingly in one and the same particle there can be only one motion (*karma*) at any given moment, since its change of place at that moment is one and definite (एकदा एकस्मिन् द्रव्ये एकमेव कर्म वर्तते। प्रशस्तपादभाष्य, कर्म पदार्थनिरूपणं). The supposition of two (instantaneous) motions in the same particle is superfluous. They may be so opposed as to neutralise each other, in which case the particle would be at rest. If they are not so opposed, and motion (*i.e.* an instantaneous change of place) follows, then, since this change of place is a definite change, one

¹ The system of transliteration adopted in Chapters II.-VI. differs from that adopted in Chapter I. and Chapter VII.

motion would be sufficient to account for it, and the hypothesis of two motions would be meaningless (अथ अतिरुद्धकर्मद्वयसमावेशः तदा एकस्मादेव उपपत्तेः द्वितीयकल्पनावैयर्थ्यम्—*Prasastapâda*). One and the same motion can effect only one particle, as the changes of place of different particles must be different (एकं कर्म न अनेकव वर्त्तते—*Ibid.*).

Now motion is always marked by a certain direction (दिग्निर्दिष्टकार्यारम्भकत्वस्य विशेषः).

(i) The successive motions of a particle may be in the same direction (rectilinear), *e.g.* (a) upward or downward vertical motion, as in throwing upwards or downwards in the case of objects moved by volition directly or indirectly (उत्थेपणं, अपथेपणं), or (b) other forms of rectilinear motion, contraction, dilation (चाकुञ्चनं, प्रसारणं); or

(ii) the directions of the successive motions may be different, as in curvilinear motion (पदनिपतदिकप्रदेश-संयोगविभागकारणं तद्गमनं), *e.g.* भ्रमण (rotatory motion), स्पन्दन (vibratory motion), etc. All these are varieties of *Gamana* (गमन, curvilinear motion). उत्थेपणादिज्ञानैः अनवरुद्धानां भ्रमणपतनस्पन्दनादीनां अवरोधार्थं गमनग्रहणं कृतम्—*Ibid.*; cf. Śāṅkara Miśra, गमनत्वं च जातिविशेषः भ्रमणरेचनस्पन्दनोदधर्व-चलननमनोजननादिभ्यवि. In another sense, all kinds of motion in material (inanimate) objects, whether rectilinear or curvilinear, are called *Gamana* (गमन).

(एतत् पञ्चविधमपि कर्म शरीरावयवेषु च तत् सम्बन्धेषु तत् प्रत्यये असत्-प्रत्यये च । यत् अन्यत् सप्रत्ययमेव तेषु अन्येषु च तत् गमनमिति *Prasasta-pâda*, कर्मग्रन्थः) ।

Single particles, then, may have a serial motion. When particles (अवयवाः) combine to form a body (अवयवो), they may move continuously in a straight line, in

which case the body is said to move in that direction (अवयविक्रियाया यावदवयवक्रियानियतत्वात्, the action of a composite whole is determined by the action of the constituent parts taken together). But different particles may move in different directions, or again, the particles may have a curvilinear motion, and in such cases it appears as if different motions are impressed on the body, e.g. the falling leaf driven by the wind may have a rotatory or vibratory motion (ध्रुवण, स्पन्दन) and a vertical downward motion (पतन) at the same time. Here each particle of the leaf taken separately has only one motion or change of place at the same moment, but from the point of view of the observer द्रष्टा, the particles have a rotatory or vibratory motion in one relation, and the leaf as a whole has a downward motion in another relation. The motion at any instant is really one, but for convenience of analysis we consider the rotatory change of place as separate from the change of place in the downward direction. एकस्मिन् कर्मणि युगपत् दृष्टुं ध्रुवणपतनप्रवेशनप्रत्ययाः कर्षं भवन्ति । अत्र तुल्य अवयवावयविनो दिग्विशिष्ट-संयोगविभागानो भेदात्—*Ibid.*

SECTION 2.

MOTION CONSIDERED IN RELATION TO ITS CAUSES

Various kinds of motion are observed :—

I. Movements which are not caused by contact with matter :—

(1) Movements caused by volition (प्रयत्न), e.g. the movement of the hand.

(2) Movement as of a falling body. This is caused

by gravity (गुरुत्व), which in the astronomical treatises of Āryabhata, Brahmagupta, and Bhāskara is ascribed to the attraction (आकर्षण, pulling force) exercised by the earth on a material body. The force of gravity may be counteracted by volition (विचारकप्रबल), as in holding up the hand, or by contact, as when a body rests on a support, or by Vega (वेग), impressed motion, as in the flying arrow which is kept from falling by the motion impressed on it.

(3) Motion of fluids, as the downward flow in a stream (स्यन्दन). This is due to fluidity (द्रवत्व), which is a characteristic property of certain kinds of atoms, in some cases original, in others produced by the contact of these atoms with the atomic particles of heat (e.g. in the fire). But Śāṅkara Miśra points out that this property, fluidity, is only a concomitant condition (असमवायिकारण); the efficient cause (निमित्तकारण) is even in this case gravity (गुरुत्व) in the particles of the fluid. यत्तदूरसंस्तरं स्यन्दनं तत् द्रवत्वात् असमवायिकारणात् उत्पद्यते, गुरुत्वात् निमित्तकारणात् असमवायिकारणेऽपि (Śāṅkara Miśra, Upaskāra, on Sūtra 4, Āhnika 2, Chap. V., of the Vaiśeṣika Sūtras).

(4) Certain motions, not due to material contact, of which the mechanical causes are unknown, and which may be ascribed to the universal final cause, Adṛiṣṭa (अदृष्ट), e.g. the first motion in atoms at the beginning of Creation, the upward motion of fiery particles or atoms, and the oblique motion of gaseous particles, vāyu (वायु), the movement of iron towards the magnet, capillary motion (अभिसर्पण) as of liquid particles from the root to the stem of a plant. The upward motions

(आरोहण) of water-particles in evaporation and in boiling do not require the hypothesis of *Adriṣṭa*, as these are caused by the pressure of heat-corpuscles (तेजः परमाणु) and the contact with air-particles (नोदनापीडनान् संयुक्तसंयोगाच्च—*Vaiśeṣika Sūtra*, Chap. V., *Āhnika* 2).

MEANING OF *ADRIṢṬA* (अदृष्ट).

Adriṣṭa (lit. unseen) stands for "unknown cause" or "unexplained Nature" in the earlier *Vaiśeṣika* writers. Several classes of cases falling under *Adriṣṭa* are distinguished, *e.g.*—

(1) The operation of merit and demerit (धर्म and अधर्म), a transcendental cause, which has to be posited in explaining the conjunctions and disjunctions of souls with their organic vehicles (bodies), which cannot be ascribed to natural causes, but presuppose the law of Karma, or the operation of moral causation, as superimposed on the natural order.

(2) Various kinds of motion in the different classes of elements, *e.g.* their natural modes of operation, such as the dispersion of *vāyu* (air, gas), the upward motion of fire, the attraction of the needle by the magnet, etc., motions which serve the ends of Creation and of created beings (उपकारकं अपकारकं). Such natural properties must be ascribed to *Adriṣṭa*, final causality (उपकारापकारसमर्थं अदृष्टकारितं), provided the cause cannot be ascertained by observation or inference.

1. लब्धवृत्तिभ्याम् धर्माधर्माभ्याम् कर्मोत्पद्यते—*Ibid.* अपसर्पणकर्म उपसर्पणकर्म, etc.

2. एवमन्यदपि महानुतेषु यत्प्रत्यक्षानुमानाभ्यामनुपलभ्यमानकारणं उपकारापकारसमर्थं च भवति तदपि अदृष्टकारितं—*Ibid.*

Jayanta in the Nyāya-Manjarī notes that Adriṣṭa is resorted to in explanation of observed phenomena only when these cannot be derived in any way from the operation of known causes—यदि चदृष्टमन्तरेण दृष्टं न सिद्ध्यति कामनदृष्टं कल्प्यताम् अन्यथा अपि तु तदुपपत्तौ किं तदुपकल्पनेन । दृष्टमिदमेहि चदृष्टं कल्प्यते ननु दृष्टविधाताय । न्यायमञ्जरी—Āhnika 1.

Similarly, Jayanta notes that, when anything is put down as natural (स्वाभाविक), we may mean either that it has no cause or no uniform cause, or no known cause. Of these the first two alternatives must always be dismissed; and "natural" can only mean something of which the cause has not yet been ascertained (स्वाभाविकं नाम किमुच्यते किमहेतुकं अविज्ञातहेतुकं अनियतहेतुकं वा । न तावदहेतुकं कार्यं सम्भवति नापि अनियतहेतुकं कार्यं किञ्चिदस्ति - न्यायमञ्जरी - चार्वाकमतनिरास ।)

This sound interpretation of Adriṣṭa was afterwards obscured. In modern writers of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika school, physical and mechanical ideas have suffered a set-back, and even the formation of the hail-stone is ascribed to the operation of moral causes (धर्मोपधर्मे).

II. We come now to motions produced by contact (संयोग). Such motions may be classed as follows, according to the nature of the contact originating them:—

(1) Motion due to direct contact with a body exercising continued pressure (नोदन), e.g. the motion of an object pushed or pulled by the hand, the motion of the mud under heavy stones, the motion of the arrow due to the pressure exercised by the bow-string, the motion of the bow-string due to the pressure of the elastic bow as it recovers its original shape, the motion of clouds, of volumes of dust, of balloons, sailing vessels and other

vehicles under the impelling force (pressure, नोदन, प्रेरण) of the wind, etc. वायुर्मेघादिप्रेरणधारणादिसमर्थः Praśasta-pāda, वायुनिरूपण-मेघादीत्यादिपदेन यानपोतादिपरिग्रहस्थेषामपि वायुना प्रेर्यमाणत्वात् । Śrīdhara मेघादीति आदिग्रहणात् वैहायसानां विमानादोनां (balloons in the sky) भीमादीनां च पानपात्रपात्रपटलादीनां जलानलयोश्च परिग्रहः (Udayana, Kiraṇāvali, वायुनिरूपणम्).

N.B.—Udayana makes a similar reference to balloons filled with gas or smoke (धूमापूरितचर्मपुटम्) in discussing the opinion that air has weight (Kiraṇāvali, वायुनिरूपणम्). These passages show that balloons were known in Udayana's time (970 A.D.—*vide* उद्घन, Lakṣaṇāvali).

(2) Motion due to direct contact for an instant with a body that strikes and produces an impact (अभिघात), *e.g.* in the cases of a stone falling against a hard object (प्राधाणादिषु निष्ठुरेष्वनुनि अभिघातेषु—Śrīdhara), the potter's rod striking the wheel, the mortar struck against the pestle. Instantaneous disjunction is necessary to impact. If there is continued contact, the result is pressure (नोदन). In some cases there may be disjunction (*i.e.* a rebound) after continued pressure (यत्र अभिघातकं द्रव्यं भूप्रदेशं अभिहतं किञ्चिदधो नीत्वा उत्पतति—श्रीधर—न्यायकन्दली).

(3) Motion due to direct contact with an elastic body which exercises a moving force by means of its elasticity (स्थितिस्थापकत्व) in the act of restitution of the original form (यथास्थितं स्थापयति), *e.g.* the motion of the bow-string due to the force exercised by the piece of bamboo (the bent bow). This force of restitution in an elastic body is a kind of *sanskāra*, *i.e.* persistent tendency (धनुःशाखाशृङ्गदन्तास्थिमृत्रवस्त्रादिषु भुवनसम्पत्तिषु स्थितिस्थापकत्वकार्यं संलक्ष्यते—प्रशस्तपादभाष्य, bows, twigs, tooth-bones, horn, thread, cloth, etc., are noted as elastic).

(4) Motion due to contact with a body which is itself in contact with another which possesses Vega (impressed motion or momentum) (वेगवद्द्रव्यसंयुक्तसंयोग). This is the fact of the transmission of pressure or moving force, and the consequent production or communication of motion, as, for example, in the pulling of an object by means of a string, the pushing of the potter's wheel by the potter's rod, etc.

SECTION 3.

CAUSE OF MOTION, OR FORCE.

Force is of the following kinds :—

1. Continued pressure (नोदन).

2. Impact (सभिषात).

3. Persistent tendency (संस्कार), of which there are two kinds : (a) Vega (वेग, impressed motion, momentum), the persistent tendency to motion in a moving body, and (b) the tendency to restitution of shape in an elastic body (स्थितिस्थापकसंस्कार).

N.B.—The psychical *sanskâra* (भावना) is here omitted.

4. Transmitted force, as in pulling by a string, pushing by a rod, etc.

5. Gravity.

6. Fluidity.

7. Volition.

8. *Adriṣṭa*, comprising various unknown agencies.

In every case of motion produced by contact, Vega is a contributory cause, as the body originating the motion must possess Vega (impressed motion, momentum).

The Concept of Vega (वेगाध्यसंस्कार).

A motion (*karma*) being conceived as a change of place in a particle is held to be incapable of producing another motion; but the pressure, impact, or other force which produces the first motion produces through that motion a *sanskāra* or persistent tendency to motion (*Vega*), which is the cause of continued motion in a straight line, i.e. in the direction of the first motion (नियतदिक्क्रिया प्रबन्धहेतुः यददिगाभिमुख्येन क्रियावेगो जन्मते तद् दिगभिमुखतेयैव क्रियासन्तानस्य हेतुरिति—श्रीधर, न्याय-कन्दली, संस्कार-निरूपणम्).

The Vaiśeṣikas accept one *sanskāra* (impressed motion, momentum) lasting till the cessation of the motion. Udyotakara and other writers of the Nyāya school suppose a series of *sanskāras*, each generating the one that succeeds it. (संस्कारेण उत्तरोत्तरकर्मसन्तानो जायते स्वजन्योत्तरसंयोगेन कर्मणि नष्टे संस्कारेण कर्मान्तरजननात् एक एव संस्कारः कर्मसन्तानजनकः ननु कर्मसन्तानवत् संस्कारसन्तानोऽपि सम्पुगनुमुचितः—शङ्करनिश्च.) It will be seen that the Nyāya view is adequate to explain acceleration, which it logically implies. The force of *sanskāra* (शक्ति) diminishes by doing work (कार्यैकरणात्) against a counteracting force, and when the *sanskāra* is in this way entirely destroyed, the moving body comes to rest (संस्कारो बाधत्पतनननुवर्जते । यथा यथा चास्य कार्यैकरणात् शक्तिः क्षीयते तथा तथा कार्यैरन्तरतमादिभेदाभिन्नपुनरायते—श्रीधर—न्याय-कन्दली-कर्मग्रन्थ). *Vega*, it will be seen, corresponds to inertia in some respects, and to momentum (impressed motion) in others. This is the nearest approach to Newton's First Law of Motion in the Vaiśeṣika theory of motion.



Vega (impressed motion), or this tendency to move on in a straight line, is counteracted by contact with tangible objects (स्पर्शवद्द्रव्यसंयोग), *e.g.* by impact or friction, including friction with the still atmosphere (स्तिमितवायु), as in the case of the arrow.

Vega (momentum) produces work in opposition to the resisting force, and thereby becomes weaker and weaker (मन्दतर मन्दतम) until it comes to an end (तत्र वेगो मूर्तिमत्सु पञ्चसु द्रव्येषु निमित्तविशेषापेक्षात् कर्मणा जायते, नियत-दिक्-क्रिया-प्रबन्धहेतुः स्पर्शवद्द्रव्यसंयोग-विशेषविरोधो Praśastapāda, संस्कार-निरूपणम्—मन्दसु वेगः स्पर्शवद्द्रव्यसंयोगमात्रेण विनश्यति यथा क्षतिदूर्गगतस्य दशोः स्तिमितवायु-प्रतिवर्धस्य—श्रीधर, संस्कारनिरूपणम्).

Causes of Pressure (नोदन) and of Impact (अभिघात).

Pressure is produced by contact acting in conjunction with Vega (impressed motion), elasticity, gravity, fluidity or volition, *e.g.* the Vega of the wind produces pressure (नोदन) on the grass, that of a current of water on the reed, that of the bow-string on the arrow. Gravity with contact produces pressure, as when the earth sinks under a heavy load.

Impact is produced by contact with a body possessing Vega (impressed motion) where the contact is instantly followed by disjunction (or rebounding). If the contact continues, the result is pressure (नोदन). (तत्र नोदन गुरुत्व-द्रवत्व-वेग-प्रत्यक्षान् समस्त-व्यस्तान् अपेक्षामातः यः संयोग-विशेषः नोदनं अभिभाग-हेतुः एकस्य कर्मणः कारणं तस्मात् चतुर्थे अपि महाभूतेषु कर्मै भवति वेगापेक्षो यः संयोग-विशेषः विभागहेतुः एकस्य कर्मणः कारणं न अभिघात तस्मादपि चतुर्थे-महाभूतेषु कर्मै भवति—प्रज्ञप्त्याद-भाष्य ।)

It is expressly noted that the four elements, earth,

water, air, and fire, are all subject to the forces of pressure and impact. Pressure and impact may be of different degrees (तीव्रमृदादिभेद). So also Vega (impressed motion, momentum).

Illustrations of Combination of Forces.

(1) Pressure acting concurrently with impressed motion or Vega, as when the moving hand possessing Vega throws the quoit or a projectile. (पाणिमुक्तेषु गमनविधिः) (ततः संस्कारनोदनाभ्यां तावत् कर्माणि भवन्ति यावत् हस्ततोमर-विभाग इति—प्रज्ञस्तपादभाष्य ।)

Similarly, in the case of the bow-string impelling the arrow, or the potter's wheel impelled by the rod, the first motion is due to pressure (नोदन), and results in a *sanskāra* (persistent tendency to motion, impressed motion or momentum), but the subsequent motions are produced by the pressure acting concurrently with the *sanskāra* (impressed motion). (तस्मात् संस्कारात् नोदन-सहायात् तावत् कर्माणि भवन्ति यावत् इष्टुन्या-विभागः—प्रज्ञस्त-पाद, कर्मग्रन्थ—प्रथमं चक्रायविनि दण्डसंयोगात् कर्म उत्पद्यते उत्तरोत्तराणि कर्माणि अभिघातात् कर्मज्ञात् संस्कारात् च भवन्ति दण्डविगमे तु चक्रं तदवयवेषु च संस्कारादेव केचलात् । श्रीधर, न्याय-कन्दलो, कर्मग्रन्थ ।)

(2) Impact (अभिघात) with impressed motion (संस्कार), as when the mortar thrown by the hand rebounds after striking the pestle (संस्कारापेक्षात् अभिघातात् मुसले उत्पन्न-कर्म—प्रज्ञस्तपाद भाष्य).

(3) Pressure (नोदन) acting concurrently with impact (अभिघात), as when the mud sinks when we strike against the ground with the feet. Here, if the feet be not in contact with the mud, but only with the surrounding ground, there is transmitted force (संयुक्तसंयोग).

(यदादिभिर्नुद्यमानायामभिहन्यमानायाम् वा पंचास्यायां पृथिव्यां यत् संयोगो नोदनाभिवाद्ययोरन्तरापेक्षो उभयापेक्षो वा स संयुक्तसंयोगः । तस्मादपि पृथिव्यादिषु कर्मे भवति ।—Prāśastapāda.)

(4) Gravity concurrently with *sanskāra* or persistent tendency, as in the case of a falling body in the second and following instants. Also the case of a stone thrown against the mud, where gravity (the weight of the stone) combines with the Vega of the stone to produce motion in the mud (Prāśastapāda). (चाहं कर्मे गुरुत्वात् भवति । तेन कर्मणा संस्कारः क्रियते तदनन्तरं उत्तरकर्माणि गुरुत्वसंस्काराभ्यां जायते द्वयोरपि प्रत्येकं अन्यत्र सामर्थ्यावधारणात्—श्रीधर, व्यास-कन्दली, कर्मग्रन्थे सप्तम्यय-कर्मेतिरूपणम् ।) This case will be further noticed below.

Udyotakara, the commentator on the Nyāya-Bhāṣya, states that a heavier body falls to the ground with greater Vega (and velocity) than one that is lighter. Udyotakara also holds, and Śrīdhara agrees with him, that the gravity (गुरुत्व) of a body (जवयवी) as a whole composed of particles (जवयवाः) is not the same as the sum of the gravities of the particles. There is a difference in amount which is, however, so small as to be imperceptible. The concept of mass in the New Mechanics of Lorenz may lend some countenance to this curious metaphysical speculation. (Śrīdhara, गुरुग्रन्थे, गुरुत्वनिरूपणम् ।)

(5) Volition acting concurrently with gravity, as in lifting up the hand. This is accompanied by transmission when an object, e.g. the quoit, is lifted by the hand.

Sanskāra (impressed motion, momentum), with or without pressure (नोदन) or impact (अभिघात), may be transmitted (दृष्टसंयुक्तस्य जवयवस्य उत्तरोत्तरकर्माणि संस्कारात् नोदनाच्च अपरेषां संस्कारात् संयुक्तसंयोगाच्च ।—Śrīdhara).

Composition of Gravity with Vega (Momentum).

When a body is let go and falls to the ground, the force acting on it is gravity (गुरुत्व), which the astronomers ascribe to the attraction of the earth. Motion is produced in the first instance by gravity alone, and this leads to a *sanskāra* (impressed motion) in the same direction. But the force of gravity continues to operate, so that, in the moments following the first, the motion is due to gravity as well as *sanskāra*. The resultant motion is one, but both the causes must be conceived as contributing to the resultant. The reason for supposing this combined action is that both gravity and *sanskāra* (impressed motion or momentum) are seen elsewhere to produce motion separately.

In the case of the falling body, therefore, there is the composition of the two, gravity and Vega, acting in the same direction (उभयसमावेशः) from the second instant onwards. It is as if two motions coalesced and resulted in one.

Here a good foundation is laid for the explanation of the accelerated motion of falling bodies, but Galileo's discovery was not anticipated, as Galileo's observations and measurements of motion were wanting. (आद्यं कर्मे गुरुत्वात् भवति तेन कर्मणा संस्कारः क्रियते तदनन्तरं उत्तरकर्मणि गुरुत्व-संस्काराभ्यां जायते द्वयोरपि प्रत्येकं अन्यत्र सामर्थ्यावधारणात्—अधर, कर्मयन्त्र—तत् आद्यं गुरुत्वात् द्वितीयादीनि तु गुरुत्वसंस्काराभ्याम्.—प्रशस्तपाद, कर्मयन्त्र ।)

But in the case of the flying arrow or other projectile, the impulsive force which produces Vega counteracts the force of gravity ; in the end, this Vega is lost through

friction with air, and then gravity (गुरुत्व) brings the arrow to the ground. The meaning of this "counter-action" is not clear. Is it intended that the action of gravity is suspended as long as the Vega continues? We have seen that, in the case of a body let fall, *Prāśastapāda* expressly states that gravity (गुरुत्व) and *sanskāra* (Vega, momentum) both act in the second and following instants. *Prāśastapāda* seems to have thought that some *sanskāras* (e.g. the Vega of an arrow or other projectile) suspend the action of gravity (गुरुत्वं संयोगप्रयत्न संस्कारविरोधि, *Prāśastapāda*, गुणग्रन्थः। येन प्रतिषन्धात् अपतनं बहिःक्षिप्तस्य शरशलाकादेः निवृत्ते नोदने कर्माणि उत्तरोत्तराणि द्यु-संस्कारादेवापतनादिति *Prāśastapāda*, कर्मग्रन्थः). Other *sanskāras* (e.g. in the case of a falling body) coalesce with gravity to produce a single resultant motion. The later commentators (from Śrīdhara downwards) certainly interpret the *Vaiśeṣika Sūtras* in this sense.

Motion of a Particle in the Case of a Composition of Forces.

Any number of motions or Vegas may be impressed on a particle, but so long as these are in a uniform direction (नियतदिग्भिर्दिष्ट) the resultant motion or Vega is in a straight line, and may be conceived as one (द्वितीयकत्वना-वैयर्थ्यम्, *Prāśastapāda*, कर्मग्रन्थः). It is only when we come to *Gamana* (curvilinear motion) and its causes that the question of composition assumes a real significance. In all such cases, each separate particle has only one Vega (impressed motion) in a definite direction (नियतदिग्भिर्मुक्तम्) at any given instant, but the composition of the successive motions and Vegas in the

same particle produces the curvilinear motion (गमन), e.g. the rotation of each constituent particle of the potter's wheel. The motion of the body (अवयवी, e.g. the wheel) results from the combined motions of the particles (अवयवाः). If pressure or impact produces motion in an opposite direction to the Vega already impressed on the body, the original direction would be changed, as is seen in the case of rebounding (उत्पतन) after impact (अभिघात). The mortar rebounding after striking the pestle is a typical instance of such change of direction in Vega or motion. The impressed force, e.g. impact (अभिघात), produces a changed motion in a different direction. One view is that the original Vega (momentum) is destroyed before a new motion and a new Vega are produced by the impact. Others hold that the impact does not destroy the original Vega (momentum), but conjointly with it produces the changed motion and, through such motion, a changed Vega in a new direction. (उलूखलमुलूखलोर्भिघातात्स्यः संयोगो-
मुलूखलगतवेगमपेक्षयाः मुलूखले उत्पतनकमे करोति यद्यपि प्राक्तनसंस्कारो
विनष्टः तथापि मुलूखलुलूखलोः संयोगः पदुलूखलोत्पादकः तस्य संस्कारारम्भ-
साधिव्यसमर्थो भवति अथवा प्राक्तन एव पदु संस्कारः अभिघातात् अविनश्यन्
अवस्थित इति *et seq.*, *Praśastapāda*, कर्मग्रन्थ ।)

Typical Cases of Curvilinear Motion (Gamana).

Vortical Motion.—This is due to the contact of two bodies moving in opposite directions with a like or equal Vega, e.g. two currents of air or water meeting from opposite directions. The change of direction is seen in the fact that water which flows downwards, or air which moves obliquely, may receive an upward

motion as the result of such collision. (अथ किमिदं संमूर्च्छनं नाम । समानवेगयोः (तुल्यवेगयोः) वाय्वोर्विरुद्ध-दिक्क्रिययोः सञ्चिपातः Prasastapāda, वायुनिरूपणं). The scholiast Udayana adds: वाय्वोरिति प्रकृतत्वेन स्पृशैव तोरिति तु विवक्षितम् । अपी यथा द्रव्यान्तर-संमूर्च्छनात् अर्ध्वगमनं परस्परभिहतनदीपयः—उदयन, द्रव्याभिरणावली. Śrīdhara notes: त्रिविध्यगतिस्वभाव-द्रव्यौर्ध्वगतित्वात् परस्परभिहत-कृतरङ्गौर्ध्वगमनवत् समानवेगयोः संमूर्च्छनं न भवति एकेन अपरस्य विनयात्—Śrīdhara.)

Vibratory Motion (कम्पन, स्पन्दन).

This will be analysed in the chapter on Acoustics.

Rotatory Motion (भ्रमण).

Each particle of the rotating body, e.g. the potter's wheel (चक्र), has, at any given instant, a motion in a definite direction. The rotatory motion of the body results from the separate motions of the particles and their persistent tendencies (संस्काराः), joined with the fact of the rigid conjunction of the particles. When the rod strikes one part of the wheel, the motion in the part struck is in the first instant produced by impact (अभिघात); while the other parts move through the transmission of force due to the rigid cohesion of parts. The subsequent motions in the part struck are due to continued pressure (नोदन) and the persistent tendency (संस्कार) set up by the first motion; while the subsequent motions in the other parts are explained by their own persistent tendencies and the transmission due to rigid cohesion. When the rod is disjoined from the wheel the rotatory motion continues, being due merely to the

persistent tendencies in the constituent parts and the resultant persistent tendency in the whole.

Other varieties of curvilinear motion in bodies are to be similarly explained (*i.e.* by the composition of Vegas) (तथा चक्रादिषु अवयवानाम् पाश्वर्तः प्रतिनियतदिग्देशसंयोगविभागोत्पत्ती यदवयविनः संस्कारादनियतदिग्देशसंयोगविभागनिमित्तं कर्म तदभ्यनमिति । एवमादयो गमनविशेषाः—Prasastapāda,—कर्मग्रन्थ । एवं वेगात् दृढसंयोगचक्रावयवे आद्यं कर्म दृढसंयोगात् । अवयवान्तरेषु च संयुक्तसंयोगात् दृढसंयुक्तस्य अवयवस्य उन्नरोन्नरकर्मैर्वा संस्कारात् नोदनात् च । अपरेषां संस्कारात् संयुक्तसंयोगात् च दृढविगमेषु चक्रे तदवयवेषु च संस्कारादेव जेष्वेवात् एवमादयो गमनविशेषाः—Śrīdhara).

SECTION 4.

MOTION OF FLUIDS.

Current motion (स्यन्दन, downward flow in a stream), upward motion (आरोहण, *e.g.* evaporation, boiling, etc.), and capillary motion (अभिसर्पण, as in plants and porous vessels) are three varieties of fluid motion which require explanation. To this may be added vortical motion (संवृज्जन), and स्यन्दन, wave motion, which will be noticed in the chapter on Acoustics.

1. Current Motion (स्यन्दन).

This is conditioned by fluidity in particles, but Śāṅkara Miśra notes that in the downward flow of water, gravity in the fluid-particles is the efficient cause (गुरुत्वात् निमित्तकारणात् अस्तनवायिकारणेषु—Śāṅkara Miśra, उपस्कार). When the water is enclosed on all sides, as in a vessel, the downward flow (स्यन्दन) is counteracted. Here the fluidity does not produce motion, because, in the case of the particles in contact with the enclosing

body, there is the resistance (प्रतिबन्ध) of the latter, which is transmitted to the other particles, and this counter-acts the fluidity. (श्रोतोभूतानामपि स्थलादिघातिसर्पणं यत् तत् द्रवत्वात् स्थन्दनं कथं समन्तात् रोधः संयोगेन अवयविद्रवत्वम् प्रतिषेधं उत्तरोत्तरावयवद्रवत्वानि संयुक्तसंयोगेः प्रतिषेधानि—Prasastapāda, कर्मवन्धः ।)

2. Upward Motion (आरोहण, e.g. evaporation).

In evaporation the fluid-particles are rarefied, and remain in a fine state of suspension; the rarefaction is due to the impulse (नोदन) or impact (अभिघात) of the heat-particles in the sun's rays, and the upward movement is due to their contact with the air under this impulse or impact. Śankara Miśra notes that in boiling there is a similar upward movement of water-particles under the impact of heat-rays. (नाद्वो वायुसंयोगात् आरोहणं नोदनापीडनात् संयुक्तसंयोगात् च । Sūtras 5 and 6, Āhnika 2, Chap. 5, Vaiśeṣika Aphorism. यथा स्थालोऽस्या जायः क्रयमानाः वायुमुन्नयन्ति-रश्मय ऊर्ध्वेन नयन्ति—Śankara Miśra, उपस्कार ।)

N.B.—These two Sūtras of Kanāda have been interpreted by the late Gangādhara Kaviratna in his commentary to refer to the upward conduction of water in pipes by the pressure of air.

The mention of the transmitted pressure (संयुक्तसंयोग) of the air seems to lend some countenance to Gangādhara's view, and the word Nādi (नाद्वः) offers no difficulty, being taken in its usual sense, "pipe" (नालिका, Nalikā), while the current interpretation does violence to the common acceptance of the word.

3. Capillary Motion (अभिसर्पण).

Two instances are given—the ascent of the sap in plants from the root to the stem (अभिः सर्पणं मूले निषिका-

नामपी वृक्षे—Śankara Miśra), and the penetrative diffusion of liquids in porous vessels, *e.g.* of the oil or ghee in an earthen jar (कुम्भादौ चकत्निहितानां तैलघृतादीनां स्थन्दनं अपनञ्च). Heat-particles have a like penetrative power (दृष्टश्चानिरोधो भर्त्सनकपालादौ तेजसः पच्यमानद्रव्यपाकसिद्धेः कलशे च निषिक्रानां अपां शोतस्पर्शग्रहणादनिरोधः—Jayanta, व्यासब्रह्मरी, Âhnika 8, इन्द्रियाणां प्राप्यकारिणम्).

This is ascribed to *adriṣṭa*, as the cause cannot be ascertained by either perception or inference (including hypothesis) (प्रत्यक्षानुमानाभ्यां अनुपलभ्यमानकारणम्—Śrīdhara).

SECTION 5.

INTERESTING EXAMPLES OF MOTION ASCRIBED TO ADRIṢṬA (UNKNOWN CAUSE, UNEXPLAINED NATURE, FINAL CAUSE).

The first motions in primordial atoms at the beginning of Creation are attributed to *adriṣṭa*. Among movements in masses of matter so caused are noted the motion of the globe of the earth and similar other bodies (महाभूतानां भूगोलकादीनां प्रथोभवे चलनम्—Praśastapāda with Śrīdhara's commentary, कर्मवैयर्थ्य). Most probably this means earthquakes, tides, etc. Âryabhata and his school would no doubt bring under this head the diurnal motion of the earth. It is interesting to note in this connection that Bhāskara refutes the Buddhist hypothesis of the earth falling perpetually *in vacuo* by arguing that the earth must remain balanced in space as there is nothing outside to attract it.

The movement of the needle (iron in general, as Śankara Miśra notes) towards the magnet is another

example of unexplained motion in matter. Cleaning and right-placing of the magnet (संमार्जनम्, चतुष्पादनम्) are necessary (सूचोर्ना लौहशलाकानो, अवस्थांताभिमुखगमनम्, सूचोर्मुखपलवणम् अवस्थानाकृदलोहमात्रमभिप्रेतम्—Śankara Miśra).

Similarly, amber attracts grass, straw, etc. (द्रवकानाम-श्वाकृष्टानो दृष्टानो गमने—Śankara Miśra, on Sūtra 15, Āhnika 1, Chap. V.).

Involuntary movements of the hand under the influence of the hypnotist's *mantras* (incantations) are also attributed to *adriṣṭa*.

SECTION 6.

MEASUREMENT OF MOTION.—UNITS OF SPACE AND TIME.

The solar day was taken as a natural measure or division of time. In the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika school the day of twenty-four hours (solar) is stated to contain $30 \times 30 \times 30 \times 18 \times 2 \times 2$ units of time (*kṣaṇas*). The Nyāya unit of time therefore measures $\frac{2}{3^5}$ of a second. The smallest measure of time mentioned by the astronomers is the Truti, which is $\frac{1}{33750}$ of a second.

The natural measure of length was the cubit (Hasta), of which there were two fixed standards, the greater and the lesser cubit. The smallest measure of length mentioned in the Śilpa-śāstra (Technology) is the Paramāṇu, which is about $\frac{1}{349325}$ of an inch. This is the same as the Trasareṇu of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika school, which stands for the thickness of the *minimum visibile* (the finest mote perceptible in the sunbeam as it comes slanting into a dark room through a chink).

Average velocity (सुलगतः—Bhāskara) was measured in accordance with the formula $v = \frac{s}{t}$, but no unit of velocity appears to have been fixed upon. There was no idea of acceleration, and of course no measurement of force. Mahavīrāchāryya gives formulæ for computing the space travelled over in cases of Sankalitagati (velocity with regular increment at stated intervals), but this does not amount to acceleration, as the intervals are not indefinitely small. Where the velocity is uniform, the interval of time may be of any amount (सुलकालः), but where the velocity is variable (प्रतिक्षणं न समागतिः—Bhāskara), an indefinitely small quantity of time (सूक्ष्मकालः) must be taken; in other words, the positions of the particle in two successive *instants* must be considered, and the velocity must be supposed to be uniform during this interval (conceived as indefinitely small, सूक्ष्म). It was in this way that Bhāskara determined the instantaneous motion of a planet (तात्कालिकी गतिः).

Component of Velocity.

The astronomers measured the motion of a heavenly body in different directions (longitude, right ascension, etc.), and calculated separately the components of motion (गतिकलाः) in these directions, and they adopted the device of transferring such component velocities from one body to another in the computation of relative motion (e.g. एवं सति चाचार्येण लाघवाय दृष्टदोषसन्धान्यो गतिकला चर्के प्रविष्टाः—Bhāskara, Siddhānta-Sīromani, Gaṇitādhyāya, Ghatīsphuṭi-prakarana).

SECTION 7.

NOTION OF THREE AXES.

Motion, we have seen, was defined as the change of position of a particle in space. To conceive position in space, Vāchaspati takes three axes, and the position in space of one particle relatively to another may be indicated by distances measured along these three axes. This remarkable analysis (*circa* 842 A.D. : वसुधैवकुतम्बरे, Vāchaspati, Nyāyasūchinibandha) anticipates in a rudimentary manner the foundations of solid (co-ordinate) geometry, eight centuries before Descartes (*vide* p. 118, *supra*).

The Principle of the Differential Calculus applied to the Computation of Motion (Variable Motion).

Bhāskara (1150 A.D.), in computing what he calls the "instantaneous" motion (तत्कालिकी गति) of a planet, compares its successive positions in two successive instants, and regards the motion as constant during the interval, which he conceives to be indefinitely small (सूक्ष्मकाल). This is equivalent to the determination of the differential of the planet's longitude, and the process bears "a strong analogy" (to quote the words of Mr. Spottiswoode, the Astronomer Royal) "to the corresponding process in modern mathematical astronomy." I have elsewhere shown that Bhāskara's process was not merely analogous to, but virtually identical with, that of the Differential Calculus, Mr. Spottiswoode's cautious reservation having been due to his want of acquaintance with the original and the insufficiency of the materials placed before him (*vide* pp. 78-79 *supra*).

SECTION 8.

RELATIVE MOTION.

The phenomenon is noticed among the hallucinations of sense (नाय्याहृदाश्च गच्छतः पर्वतादीनि विज्ञानानि भ्रमेण भ्रमन्तश्च तान् —Kumārila, Śloka-Vārtika, p. 520). Astronomers like Āryabhata and Lalla, who believed in the diurnal revolution of the earth from the west to the east, explained the apparent revolution of the starry heavens in the opposite direction by the principle of relative motion.

SECTION 9.

SERIAL MOTION.

Several Santānas (series) of motions are incidentally noticed, *e.g.* vibration (स्पन्दन, कम्पसन्तान), wave motion (वोचिस्तरङ्ग), current motion (स्यन्दन).

In an interesting passage, Charaka notes three instances of serial motion, viz. those of water, sound, and light (जलसन्तान, शब्दसन्तान and अग्निःसन्तान), to which he compares the course (सन्तान) of chyle (or chyle-blood) in the Dhamanis (veins) and other ducts of the body.

Dalvana thinks that downward, oblique, and upward currents of chyle are respectively intended by the three illustrations; but Chakraspāṇi points out that the Santāna (wave) of sound travels in all directions (the same is of course true also of light), and that differences in speed (and not in direction) are here meant. In other words, a Santāna of sound travels more rapidly than that of water, and less rapidly than one of light (अग्निःसन्तान), and Charaka's meaning is that the metabolic

course may complete its circuit with greater or less speed. Whether, in this passage, the three Santānas are viewed as waves or currents, is not specified; but the difference between a wave (वोचि) and a current (स्यन्दन) was well known.

A current of water (स्यन्दन, downward flow) consists of particles moving in an uninterrupted series under the action of gravity and fluidity (गुरुत्व and द्रवत्व, Śankara Miśra). A wave (वोचितरङ्ग), on the other hand, is constituted by the transmission of vibratory motion (स्यन्दन) in the water-particles (*e.g.* Jayanta, पतद्घनप-योविन्दुसन्दोहस्यन्दनकलात् — Nyāya-Manjarī, Âhnika 2).

A ray of light, on the other hand, was supposed to imply the rectilinear propagation of indefinitely minute corpuscles in all directions, with inconceivable velocity, and a sort of conical dispersion (अचिन्त्योहि वेगातिशयः त्रेजः प्रसरेति पृथग्यत्नात् — Udyotakara, Vāchaspati).

CHAPTER III.

HINDU IDEAS ON ACOUSTICS.

SECTION I.

ANALYSIS OF SOUND.

The Mimāṃsakas.—In their analysis of Sound, the Mimāṃsakas distinguish between three elements: (1) Nāda, a quality of Vāyu (air), which is the physical basis of audible sound; (2) Dhvani, sound as heard, audible sound; and (3) in the case of significant sound, Sphota, "transcendental" or "intelligible" sound, representing the Platonic ideas or *logoi*, which are eternal (नित्य), ubiquitous (व्यापक), and noumenal (निराधार, *lit.*, without substrate or ground—Kumārila). The Sphotas are manifested by the Dhvanis (audible sounds), of course only in the case of words (शब्द, संज्ञा). Upavarṣa, the teacher of Panini, rejected the Sphotas in favour of the Varnas, which were conceived to be "phonetic moulds" with natural significance.

As regards sound in its physical aspect and the mode of its propagation, some of the Mimāṃsakas content themselves with saying that Vāyu (air) has a special quality (Nāda) which causes audible sound (नादो वायुगुणः वायुर्वा यदि कस्येति—Kumārila, Śloka-Vārtika; वायुरेव तात्त्वादिस्थानसंयोगात् शब्दगुणको निश्चयते, शब्दस्यापि वायुगुणत्वं वेदितव्यम्—Pārtha-Sārathi Miśra, Nyāyaratnākara).

Others, including the teachers of the Śikṣā (Vedic chanting), hold that the physical basis of sound is a series of air movements (वायुसन्नान, cf. Udyotakara's and Vāchaspati's reports); in other words, the air-particles themselves flow in a current in all directions, being obstructed in their path by the impact of tangible objects (i.e. material bodies), and the movement ceases, as in the arrow, when the moving force is thus exhausted (e.g. स गच्छन्सर्वतोदिक्षु उद्गामवेगाहितक्रियः शरवत् वेगशान्त्येव न दूरं गन्तुमर्हति . . . शिष्याविदस्तु पवनान्मकमेव शब्दमाचक्षते — Jayanta, Nyāya-Manjarī). But the orthodox Mimāṃsā view is that of the Mimāṃsā doctor, Śābara Svāmi, who holds that Nāda (the physical basis of sound) is a wave-motion of air, being the transmission of conjunctions and disjunctions in the minute particles of air, the wave originating in the first impact, and being continued by the successive impacts of the minute particles (e.g. संयोगविभागानैरनर्थेण क्रियमाणाः शब्दमभिष्वज्जन्तो नादशब्दवाच्याः (17-1-1) अभिषातेन हि प्रेरिता वायवः स्तिमितानि वार्यन्तराणि प्रतिधावमानः सर्वतो दिङ्मान् संयोगविभागान् कृत्वादयन्ति वायवेन अभिप्रतिष्ठन्ते । ते च वायोरप्रत्यक्षत्वात् संयोगविभागा नोपलभ्यन्ते । अनुपरातेषु एव तेषु शब्द उपलभ्यते । नोपरातेषु यत्रएव च अनुवाते दूरात् उपलभ्यते शब्दः — Śābara-Bhāṣya, Sūtra 13, Pāda 1, Adhyāya 1). In this view, the particles of air (वायव्यकषाः) are subject to a vibratory motion (a sort of *parispanda*) in the production of sound (परिस्पन्दविलक्षण — Jayanta, Nyāya-Manjarī). The Vākyapadiya describes articulate sounds (*varnas*), and indeed all sounds (*śabdas*), as only forms of air set in motion, with rarefaction and condensation (प्रचय), and capable of variations of velocity and configuration (लब्धक्रियः प्रयत्नेन वक्षुरिङ्गानु-

वर्तिना स्थानेष्वभिहतो वायुः शब्दत्वं प्रतिपद्यते । तस्य कारणसामर्थ्यात्
वेगप्रचयधर्मिणः संनिपातात् विभज्यन्ते सारवत्योर्ध्वं मूर्च्छयः । Vākya-
padiya, Kāṇḍa 1, Śloka 109).

Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika.—The early Nyāya writers hold that the sound-wave (शब्दसन्तान) has its substrate in Ākāśa (ether) and not Vāyu (air). Later writers (e.g. Vāchaspati in the Tattvavindu) add that sound itself as a phenomenon is not to be conceived as a mode of motion (*parispanda*), for Ākāśa, the substrate, is, in the Nyāya view, incapable of motion (न तावत् परिस्पन्दस्य मूर्च्छनुविधायिनो द्रव्ये विभुनि विभुगुणे वा शब्दे मूर्च्छभावेनासंभवात्—Tattvavindu). At the same time the propagation of sound must be conceived on the analogy of waves in water (वोचितरङ्गन्याय). Udyotakara in the Vārtika, Vāchaspati in the Tātparyyatikā, and Jayanta in the Nyāya-Manjarī controvert the three views current in the Mīmāṃsā school—(1) that Nāda, the physical basis of audible sound, is a specific quality of Vāyu (air), (2) that sound, in its physical aspect, is constituted by a series of air movements of the nature of a current (वायुसन्तान), and (3) that it is not air-currents but air-waves, series of conjunctions and disjunctions of the air-particles or molecules (वायव्यसंघाः, वायुपरमाणवः), that constitute the Nāda, the sound physical, to which, in the case of significant sounds, the Mīmāṃsakas assign the function of manifesting the Sphota, “transcendental” or “intelligible” sound (*logos*, the word). Vide Udyotakara Vārtika, Adhyāya 2, Āhnika 2, Sūtra 14; also Tātparyyatikā, माभूत् वायुसन्तानो मा च मूर्च्छद्गुणो नादः शब्दस्य व्यञ्जकः वायव्यमासु संयोगविभागव्यञ्जका भवन्ति इत्यत आह, etc., *loc. cit.* Against these views the early Nyāya doctors

maintain that sound is a specific quality of Âkāśa (ether) and not of Vāyu (air). At the same time they admit that the impact which originates the sound phenomenon (अवायवद्विज्ञानविशेषगुण) in Âkāśa does so by setting up a vibration in the molecules of the object struck (*e.g.* a bell), and that these vibrating molecules impinge against the air-molecules in contact (वायुपरमाणवः, आध्यात्मिकवायुः). In other words, though Âkāśa is the substrate (साधन), the efficient cause of sound (निमित्तकारण) is to be found in the mechanical impact (अभिघात) of vibrating molecules of sonorous bodies against contiguous molecules of air. As to the propagation of sound, the early Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika writers content themselves with stating that the first sound thus produced in the substrate Âkāśa by the impact of the vibrating molecules (*e.g.* of a bell) against the contiguous molecules of air, produces a second sound in the contiguous Âkāśa, and the second sound a third, and so on, in the same way as waves are generated in water, until the last sound sets up a vibration in the ear-drum (कर्णशङ्कुलि). Of course, this propagation of sound-wave in Âkāśa (ether) is effected by means of the air-wave as its vehicle. This is the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika hypothesis (कल्पना) of an independent sound-wave (शब्द-मलान). Âkāśa (ether) is motionless, but the air-wave would not be transmitted if the air-molecules were not interconnected by Âkāśa. Praśastapāda, the Vaiśeṣika doctor, for example, describes the first sound as giving off a second, the second a third, and so on, expanding in Âkāśa, in the same way as waves are supposed to propagate themselves in the ocean.

शब्दोष्मरगुणः संयोगविभागश्चन्दनः स्थानवायुसंयोगापेक्षमानात्
 स्थानाकाशसंयोगात् वयोत्पत्तिः । अवर्णैल्लयणोऽपि भेरीदयश्चसंयोगापेक्षात्
 भेय्योकाशसंयोगात् उत्पद्यते । वेषुपर्वविभागात् वेषाकाशविभागाच्च शब्दाच्च
 शब्दाच्च संयोगविभागनिष्पन्नात् वीचिसन्नानवत् शब्दसन्नान इत्येकं सन्नानेन
 ओत्रप्रदेशमागतस्य ग्रहणम् । Praśastapāda, यथा मलवीच्या तदप्यवहिते
 देशे वीच्यन्तरमुपजायते ततोऽप्यन्यत् ततोऽप्यन्यदित्यनेन क्रमेण वीचिसन्नानो
 भवति तथा क्रमेण शब्दसन्नानो भवति । नन्वेवा कस्यना कुतः सिद्धतीत्याह
 etc. (Śrīdhara, *ibid.*). On this hypothesis the locus of
 the sound at any moment forms a circle in Ākāśa, and
 the propagation is carried on in the air by means of
 ever-expanding circles, as in the case of waves in water.
 But this analogy is rejected by some (*e.g.* Udyotakara),
 who hold that the first sound gives off not one sound
 in a circle, but an indefinite number of sounds in all
 directions, and each of these again gives off another,
 and so on, so that sound may be said to expand by
 successive concentric spherical layers, even as the
 Kadambakoraka (the so-called bud of the *Nauclea*
Kadamba) expands by successive concentric spherical
 layers of filaments which shoot forth from one another.
 On the first of these two hypotheses, the air-wave
 implied in the transmission of sound is of the nature of
 what we call transverse waves; on the second, of the
 nature apparently of longitudinal waves. In any case, it
 is clear that the orthodox Mimāṃsa view of Śābara Svāmi,
 that the air-wave constituting physical sound means
 a series of mere conjunctions and disjunctions of air-
 particles with rarefaction and condensation (*e.g.*, सर्वतोदिक्कान्-
 संयोगविभागानैरन्तर्येण, Śābara, प्रथम, Vākyapadiya), implies
 longitudinal waves, वीचितरङ्गन्यायेन तदुत्पत्तिस्तु कीर्तिता कदम्बकोरक
 न्यायादुत्पत्तिः कस्यचित्कते (Viśvanātha, Bhāṣhā Parichheda,

Śloka 165); परिशेषाच्च सन्नानसिद्धिः । तच्चाद्यः शब्दः संयोग-विभाग-हेतुकः । तस्मात् शब्दान्तराणि कदम्बगोलकन्यायेन सर्वदिक्षानि । तेभ्यः प्रत्येकमेकैकः शब्दः मन्दतरतमादिभावेनाश्रयाप्रतिबन्धमनुविधोयमानः प्रादुरस्ति । ततोऽन्यस्यातिनान्धात् शब्दान्तरोत्पत्तिः—शक्तिविषातो येन केनचित् प्रतिबन्धात् भवति (Udyotakara, II., 2, 14). As the momentum of the impact series (which constitutes the efficient cause of the sound-wave) grows feebler and feebler in the course of transmission through the air-particles, the sound at last dies away. Gangeśa, in the Chintāmaṇi, holds that the propagation is not from molecule to molecule, but travels in ever-expanding circles as in water-waves, perhaps in spherical layers by compression of masses of air; and these air-waves, the vehicles of sound, are exceedingly swift. This explains the velocity of sound. शब्देन च अल्पवहितपरमासुदेशोत्पादक्रमेण न शब्दारम्भो येन मेषनादि शब्दानां भूलोकप्राप्तिर्युगान्तरेऽपि न स्यात् । किन्तु मेषाद्यभिहतं सर्वतोऽगामि-महाबायोर्मेहति देशे संयोग-निमित्तमासाद्य आद्यशब्देन सर्वं दिग्बतशब्दः एक एव जन्मते उत्तरोत्तरेणापि अधिकाधिकदेशतः सर्वत्र एकैक एव शब्दः वीचित्ररङ्गपदुपपद्यते वायोश्च नयनपत, महापेगतया शीघ्रगामित्वेन अयिमशब्दारम्भात् आद्यशब्दानन्तरं अचिरेणैव शब्दोपलम्भः । वायोरेव च मन्दतरतमादिक्रमेण मन्दादिशब्दोत्पत्तिः यथा आद्य शब्देन कदम्बगोलकपद दशदिशि दशशब्दा आरभ्यन्ते तैश्च दशशब्द सन्नाना इति (Gangeśa, Tattva Chintāmaṇi).

But how does the first sound produce the second, the second the third, and so on? At every step the efficient cause, the impact of some vibrating molecule against a contiguous molecule of air, must be posited, and this is equally applicable to a sound produced by a sound (शब्दनशब्द) as to one produced by conjunction and disjunction (संयोगज or विभागज). In other words, the sound-wave (शब्दसन्नान) in Ākāśa necessarily implies an

air-wave. The Mimāṃsaka view, then, that explains the propagation of sound by the transmission of the original oscillatory motion through the successive layers of air by means of successive impacts or pressures producing conjunction and disjunction of air-molecules (वायवीयाः संयोगविभागाः—Śābarabhāṣya), or rarefaction and condensation (प्रचय—Vākyapadīya), is also implied in the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika doctrine of the sound-wave (शब्दसन्तान), the difference being that in the latter the air-wave, which is conceived as a mode of serial motion (गति-सन्तान), is only the vehicle or medium of propagation of a so-called sound-wave in Ākāśa, which is not itself a mode of motion. This is what we find expressly and elaborately formulated in the later Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika (*vide* Gaṅgeśa, Chintāmaṇi, *supra*).

SECTION 2.

ANALYSIS OF VIBRATORY MOTION, *e.g.* OF A BELL (IN AIR).

The molecules of a bell vibrate when the bell is struck. The question is—what is the nature of this vibratory movement? Vātsyāyana and Udyotakara answer that, when the hand strikes the bell, some of the molecules are displaced (from their stable position—*i.e.* there is *karma* in the molecules), and thus a Sanskāra (here a kinetic Sanskāra, momentum) is generated (संस्कार, कर्मसन्तानसंस्कार—Vātsyāyana and Vāchaspati), and the molecules swing forward under the action of this Sanskāra until they strike the contiguous molecules of air. This now is a case of mutual impact, which divides

ततः कर्मणः संस्कारः संस्कारेण पुनः कर्म पुनर्वायुपग्रह इत्येवमादिन्यायेन संस्कार उत्पद्यते । तत्र अत्यस्यातिमान्धातृष्यदाया महाभूतद्योभशक्तेरभावः ततो वायुपग्रहोच्छेदः ततःसंस्कारश्च इति (1) Udyotakara Vārtika, Adhyāya 2, Āhnika 2, Sūtra 36. (ष्यदातृदवयवसंयुक्ता वायुपरमाणव एव आध्यात्मिको वायुः—Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatīkā, *loc. cit.*, also संस्कारं वेगाख्यं करोति). But cf. Viśvanātha, संस्कारभेदो वेगोऽयं स्थितिस्थापकभाषणे । मूर्तिमात्रेण वेगः स्यात् कर्मज्ञो वेगजः क्वचित् । स्थितिस्थापकसंस्कारः स्थितौ केचिच्चतुर्ध्वेपि । अतोन्द्रियोष्मैर्विज्ञेयः क्वचित् स्पन्देऽपि कारणम्—Bhāṣhā-parichehḥeda, Ślokas 157-159.

As the air-wave forms the vehicle of the sound-wave, if it does not constitute the sound-wave itself, the favourable or retarding influence of currents of wind is easily explained. The presence or absence of water (and other intervening objects) offering greater or less resistance to the transmission of the wave-motion also easily accounts for the greater or less distance to which the sound is carried.

SECTION 3.

ECHO.

प्रतिध्वनि (Echo) was supposed to be a reflection of sound. Some consider it to be an after-sound, a sound generated by sound. Others suppose it to be due to the reflection of sound in the same way as an image in water or in a mirror (प्रतिबिम्ब) is due to the reflection of light. There is an element of hallucination in either case (बुद्धिपरिणामविशेषः)—the image in water is not a real image, neither is the echo the real sound it is taken to be. (रूपवत्त्वं च न सामान्यतः प्रतिबिम्बप्रयोजकं शब्दस्यापि प्रतिध्वनिरूपप्रतिबिम्ब

दर्शनात् । न च शब्दव्यशब्दानामेव प्रतिध्वनिरिति वाच्यं स्फटिकलौहिता-
 त्तेरपि जपासविकर्षजन्मतापस्या प्रतिबिम्बमित्यान्वमिद्वानुसृतेरिति । प्रतिविम्वश्च
 बुद्धेरेव परिणामविशेषो विद्याकारो जलादिगत इति मन्यन् ।—Vijnāna-
 bhikṣu, Pravachana-Bhāṣya, Chap. I, Sutra 87.)

SECTION 4.

PITCH, INTENSITY, AND TIMBRE.

Sounds differ from one another by their pitch (तारमन्दादिभेद), by their intensity (तौघमन्दादिभेद), and by their quality or timbre (संज्ञाधारण धर्मे). When a bell is struck, an indefinite number of notes (श्रुतिभेद, tones and overtones) are emitted, of varying pitches; and the notes die away, becoming less and less intense. Now, we know that the molecules swing to and fro, and that the Sanskāra (momentum, *vega*) of the vibrations (कम्पसन्नानसंस्कार) grows feebler and feebler. The differences in pitch (tones and overtones) as well as in intensity must be due to variations in the Sanskāras of the vibrations. The distinguishable pitches (called *Srutis*, श्रुतिभेद) as well as the degrees of intensity (तौघमन्दादि) must be ascribed to variations in the *vega* (momentum), and, by implication, the frequency, etc., of the vibrations.

Cf. Vātsyāyana, II., 2, 36—षष्ठ्यास्य सन्नानवृत्तिसंस्कारभूते
 पदुमन्दमिति चक्षते तस्यानुवृत्त्या शब्दसन्नानानुवृत्तिः पदुमन्दभावाच्च
 तौघमन्दा शब्दस्य तत्कृतश्च श्रुतिभेदः *Vide* also Udyotakara's
 analysis of vibration based on Vātsyāyana: षष्ठ्यास्य-
 भिहन्मन्मानायां तारस्वारतरो मन्दोमन्दतर इति श्रुतिभेदावानाशब्दसन्नानो हि
 खविच्छेदेन श्रुयते । सन्नानवृत्तित्वात् मन्दतरमन्दतमादिभिन्नरूपानुविधायिनं
 शब्दनुत्पादयन्ति तच्च कारणं संस्कारः—Udyotakara, Vārtika,

Adhyāya 2, Āhnika 2, Sūtra 36. सन्नानवृत्तिना कारणेन
श्रुतिभेदोत्पत्तिः—Vāchaspatī, Tātparyyatikā, *loc. cit.*

Sounds also differ from one another in volume or massiveness in the case of coalescence (समानजातीयोपचयः). A sound both loud and massive is called महान् (large)—
एवं शब्दसन्नान एव तारः महान् इत्युच्यते तवाप्यस्ति समानजातीयोपचयः
अस्ति च स्फुटतरत्नम् महानपि स्फुटतरः । अयमपि तथा इति महानित्युच्यते—
Vāchaspatī, II., 2, 36.

Śābara, the Mimāṃsā doctor, explains massiveness (महत्त्व) as due to नादवृद्धि, the coalescence of different air-waves, which by their simultaneous impact affect a comparatively large tract of the ear-drum (यच्चैतत् बहुभिर्भेरीमाध्मानद्भिः शब्दमुच्चारयद्भिर्महान् शब्द उपलभ्यते । न वृद्धे शब्दः । मृदुरेकेन बहुभिश्चोच्चार्यमाणे तावदेव अक्षराणि कर्णशङ्कुलोमगलस्य सर्वे नेमि व्याप्तवद्भिः संयोगविभागनैरन्त्यर्थेण अनेकशो ग्रहणात् महान् इव अवयववानिव उपलभ्यते । संयोगविभागनैरन्त्यर्थेण क्रियमाणाः शब्दमभिध्वज्जना नादशब्दवाच्याः । तेन नादस्यैषा वृद्धिः न शब्दस्य—Śābara on Jaimini, Sūtra 17, Adhyāya 1, Pāda 1). The Mimāṃsakas, who resolve sounds into air-waves, attribute all differences, whether of pitch, intensity, or massiveness, to differences in the series of conjunctions and disjunctions of air-particles that form the waves (*vide* Vāchaspatī's report, शब्दानां तु संयोगविभागयोर्नानां युक्तद्वन्द्वेन रूपभेदः ; *cf.* also the later Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, which accepts air-waves as vehicles of sound-waves : वायोरेव मन्दतरतमादिक्रमेण मन्दादि-शब्दोत्पत्तिः—Gangeśa, Tattva Chintāmaṇi). It may be noted that the terms त्रोट and मन्द are occasionally used in a general sense, and applied to express higher and lower degrees of pitch as well as of intensity.

There are also differences of quality (शब्दस्य समाधारणधर्मैः). The same sound *ga* (ग), of the same pitch

and intensity, uttered by men and parrots, can be distinguished; so also the sounds, even the same notes of the scale, given out by a wind instrument like the *venu* and a stringed instrument like the *vina*. Similarly, there are sexual and even individual differences of voice (अस्ति हि शुक्सारिकामनुष्यकस्तम्रभेदेषु ककारादिषु स्फुटतरः रूपभेदप्रत्ययः पुंसाम् । एवं स्त्रीपुंसप्रभवेषु स्त्रीपुंसभेदप्रभवेषु च—Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatikā, II., 2, 14. वीणा वाद्यते वेषुः पूर्व्यते वीणावेषु शब्दयोरसाधारणी धर्मेः—Udyotakara, II., 1, 15. वेषु वीणामृदङ्गादिप्रभवेषु भेदप्रत्ययः शुक्सारिकामनुष्यकस्तम्रादिभेदप्रत्ययः—Gangeśa and Ma-thurānātha). The sounds emitted by impact of the different Bhûtas (echo from Âkâśa, hissing from the wind, puffing from fire, bubbling from water, and splitting or cracking from earth) are characteristic examples of such differences of timbre (*vide* Pan-chadaśī, Bhûtaviveka, Śloka 3).

The Vākya-padiya (Kānda I, Śloka 109), as we have seen, ascribes all differences (whether of pitch, volume, or timbre) to the characteristic forms of the air-waves, which differ from one another by their configuration (सन्निपातात् विभज्यन्ते मूत्रैः), and are capable of variations of velocity (momentum, *vega*) as well as of rarefaction and condensation (कारणसामर्थ्यात्) प्रचयधर्मिणः

There are passing references to the obscuration (अभिभव) of sounds in Vātsyāyana, Udyotakara and Vāchaspati, but the subject is treated more from a psychological than from a physical point of view. (तीव्रभेरीशब्दः मन्दतन्त्रीशब्दमभिभवति न मन्दः । नानाभूतेषु शब्दसन्तानेषु सन्तु श्रोत्र-प्रणालिभावेन कस्यचित् शब्दस्य तीव्रेण मन्दस्य अभिभवो युक्तः—Vātsyāyana, II., 2, 14; *vide* Udyotakara and Vācha-spati, *loc. cit.* Here तीव्र = loud, and मन्द = low.)

SECTION 5.

MUSICAL SOUNDS.

Śrutis and Svaras.—We have already seen that the distinguishable pitches are called Śrutis, and they are proportioned to the *vega* (momentum) of the *kampa-santana* (vibration). Now the ratio of a note to its octave (in respect of pitch) is given as 1 : 2; we may therefore conclude that the *vega* of the vibration in the latter case was considered to be twice as great as in the former. An indefinite number of Śrutis could be interposed between a note and its octave (आनन्त्यं हि श्रुतीनां च मूषयन्ति विपश्चितः यथा ध्वनिविशेषाणामन्तान् गगनोदरे । संगीतरत्नाकर । cf. संगीतपारिजात । केशवप्रवचनेन बह्व्योर्गपि श्रुतयः स्मृताः—संगीतपारिजात, Śloka 40). Twenty-two such are named and recognised for musical purposes. But a Śruti as such cannot constitute a musical tone (Svara). A Śruti is a simple (unmixed) and fundamental tone of a certain pitch, whereas an ordinary musical tone (Svara) is really composed of a fundamental tone (Śruti) and certain partial tones (harmonics, Anurananas, अनुस्वन). The musical tones (Svaras), vocal or instrumental, are therefore of the nature of what we call clangs, because, either accompanying or following the Śrutis or simple fundamental tones (ह्रस्वादिमात्र), are always found certain partial tones (अनुस्वन). अथहारे त्वमी चेपा इति मन्द्रोऽभिधीयते । कण्ठे मध्यो मूर्ध्नि तारो द्विगुणोऽनुरोहः (संगीतरत्नाकर) इति मन्द्रोऽगले मध्यो मूर्ध्नि तार इति क्रमात् । द्विगुणः पूर्वपूर्वेणात्—Dāmodara, Sangīta-darpana, Chap. I., Śloka 49. अनुस्वननिरुपायो यः सिग्धोऽनुस्वनात्मकः । स स्वरः उच्यते—Sangīta-ratnākara. स स्वरः यः श्रुतिस्थाने स्वनं दृढपरस्परकः (संगीतदानोदर) द्वाविंशतिविधो मन्द्रोऽध्वनिः सञ्जायते

इति । स एव द्विगुणो मध्यः कण्ठस्थाने यथाक्रमम् । स एव मस्तके तारःस्थान्मध्यात् द्विगुणक्रमात्—Sangita Samaya Sāra, 1. नादाच्च श्रुतयो नातास्ततः षड्नादयः स्वराः । प्रथमश्रवणाच्छब्दः श्रूयते ह्रस्वनात्रकः सा श्रुतिः सम्परिक्षेया स्वरावयवलक्षणा । स्वरूपमानश्रवणावादीभ्युरक्षते विना । श्रुतिरित्युच्यते—Dāmodara, Sangita-darpana, Chap. I., Śloka 51. The relation between a Śruti and a Svara is variously conceived as (1) परिणाम modal change ; (2) व्यनन manifestation ; (3) नादात्म्यम् नातिष्यक्षेरिव the relation of genus and species ; (4) विवर्त्तन (मुखं यद्वद् दर्पणेषु विवर्त्तितं) reflection ; (5) कार्यकारणभाव, the relation of cause and effect ; cf. संगीतपारिजात by Ahobala, श्रुतयस्तु स्वरा भिन्नाः श्रावणत्वेन हेतुना । अहिकुण्डलवत् तच्च भेदोक्तिः शास्त्रसम्भवा ।—संगीत-पारिजातः Śloka 38.

SECTION 6.

THE NOTES OF THE DIATONIC SCALE: DETERMINATION OF THEIR RELATIVE PITCH.

The pitch of a note is inversely proportional to the length of the wire (तन्वीतनुस्वरो ज्ञेयः तद्वैध्यव्यस्तमानतः—शेखरीलावती, quoted by Mr. Devala in his "Hindu Musical Scale").

The pitch of the fundamental note to that of its octave is as 1 : 2 (मध्यस्थानस्यः षड्जः द्विगुणस्तनः—रागविबोध, quoted by Mr. Devala).

The pitch of the fourth note (F) to that of the fundamental (C) is as 4 : 3 (उभयोः षड्जयोर्मध्ये मध्यमं स्वरमाचरेत्—संगीतपारिजात, quoted by Mr. Devala).

The vibrations of the fifth note (G) to those of the fundamental (C) are as 3 : 2 (त्रिभागात्मकवोक्षायां षष्ठमः स्यात्तदधिमे ।—संगीतपारिजात, quoted by Mr. Devala).

Concord (सम्वादिता) is either perfect or imperfect. The

ratio of perfect concord is 3 : 2 ; that of imperfect concord, 4 : 3 (स-प-म-न मुख्याः संवादिनः स्वराः एकसंश्रयाः प्रायः—रागविबोध, quoted by Mr. Devala) ; *e.g.* if D be the Vādi, A would be a Samvādi ; if E be the Vādi, B would be a Samvādi : in each case a perfect concord. The pitch of D is determined from that of G, and the pitch of A from that of D, in each case, by the rule of perfect concord.

Determination of the pitches of E and B (after Mr. Devala). This may be done in either of the following ways :—

(1) E may be determined from A, and B from E, by the rule of perfect concord. This would give $303\frac{3}{4}$ as the value of the pitch of E, and $455\frac{1}{2}$ as that of the pitch of B, if the pitch of C be taken as 240 ; *or*

(2) E may be determined from C by reduction of the fifth harmonic by two octaves, a sort of imperfect concord ; and then B may be determined from E by the rule of perfect concord. This would give 300 for E, and 450 for B, if C be taken as 240.

Mr. Devala, in his investigations with the "Sonochord," finds that Hindu musicians (and Sanskrit writers on music) adopted the latter values for E and B, as they tested their notes by harmonics (नेहगतस्वयन्मुखर-पङ्क्तिप्रानाख्येन—रागविबोध, quoted by Mr. Devala). The Hindus therefore followed just intonation.

SECTION 7.

MUSICAL INTERVALS.

Musical tones are related to one another in four ways as Vādis, Samvādis, Vivādis, and Anuvādis. The

mediaeval compilations explain these in reference to melody, and harmony is altogether unknown, but the terms might be used to indicate relations of harmony as well. The Vâdî might in that case answer to the key-note (or tonic), and the Samvâdis to the two consonances, the fifth (2 : 3), and the fourth (3 : 4).

The rule given for the determination of a Samvâdî is 12 or 8 Śrutis intervening, the intervals being, therefore, 13 and 9 Śrutis respectively (giving the ratios $\frac{3}{2}$ and $\frac{4}{3}$).

C being the Vâdî, G and F are stated to be the Samvâdis.

In the same way, it is stated that if D be the Vâdî, A would be a Samvâdî. If E be the Vâdî, B is given as a Samvâdî.

On the other hand, a two-Śruti interval (*i.e.* a difference of a semitone) gives a Vivâdî, which would thus answer to a dissonance. This is given as a general rule (द्विश्रुत्यन्तरौस्वरौविवादिनौ Matanga). Other cases are also noticed, *e.g.* E is a Vivâdî to D, and B to A, and *vice versa* (ratio of 9 : 10).

The notes that do not come under these heads are Anuvâdis (*e.g.* the sixth); *cf.* Bharata, Nāṭya-Śāstra, Chap. XXVIII, Ślokas 23-24.

Also Sangīta-ratnākara :—

चतुर्विधा स्वरा वादी सम्वादी विवाद्यपि अनुवादीति । वादीषु प्रयोगे बहुलस्वरः अतयो द्वादशाष्टौ वा ययोरन्तर्योचराः निष्ठाः सम्वादिनी तौ स्त्रो निगावन्विवादिनी । रिषयोरेव वा स्वाता तौ तयोर्वारिषापि । शेषाष्टाननुवादित्वम् । (स्वराध्यायः).

CHAPTER IV.

HINDU IDEAS ABOUT PLANTS AND
PLANT-LIFE.

SECTION 1.

CLASSIFICATION OF PLANTS.

Charaka :—Plants according to *Charaka* are divisible into (1) *Vanaspatis*, trees bearing fruit without flowers ; (2) *Vânaspatyas*, trees bearing flowers as well as fruits ; (3) *Auśadhis*, herbs that wither after fructification ; and (4) *Virudhs*, other herbs with spreading stems.

Chakrapâṇi notes in his commentary on *Charaka* : The *Virudhs* comprise two classes, (1) *Latās*, creepers ; (2) *Gulmas*, herbs with succulent (or cactaceous) stems and shrubs. The *Auśadhis* are sub-divided into (1) annuals or perennials, bearing fruit, and (2) plants that wither away after maturing and without fructification, e.g. grasses like the *Dârvâ* (*Cynodon dactylon*).

Suśruta :—*Suśruta*'s division is identical with *Charaka*'s. *Dalvana*, the commentator, gives some details. The *Plakṣa* (*Ficus infectoria*) and the *Udumvara* (*Ficus glomerata*) are given as instances of trees bearing fruits without flowers (*Vanaspatis*). It appears that plants with naked and incomplete flowers (achlamydeous plants) were considered as flowerless, as also trees whose flowers, like those of the fig, are placed

on the internal walls of a common receptacle. Of the *Brikṣas*, flower- and fruit-bearing trees, the mango-tree, the *Jambu*-tree (*Eugenia jambolana*), etc., are given as examples. The *Virudhs* are of two classes, (1) creepers with stems spreading on the ground (प्रतानपत्रः), and (2) herbs with succulent (or cactaceous) stems (गुल्मिन्यः or क्षत्रिन्यः वर्तुलतामन्तनिविशिष्टाः). *Auṣadhis* are those that wither away after fructification, e.g. wheat, barley, etc. (फलपाकनिष्ठा गोपूनादयः). Some divide *Auṣadhis* into two classes, (1) those that wither after bearing fruit, e.g. paddy, linseed, pulses, etc., and (2) plants that wither after maturity, and bear neither flowers nor fruits, e.g. the mushroom, etc.

Praśastapāda :—*Praśastapāda*, the Vaiśeṣika doctor, classifies plants as follows :—(1) *Triṇas*, grasses ; (2) *Auṣadhis*, herbs that wither after fructification ; (3) *Latās*, spreading and creeping herbs ; (4) *Avatānas*, arboraceous plants and shrubs ; (5) *Brikṣas*, trees bearing flowers and fruits ; and (6) *Vanaspatis*, trees bearing fruits without flowers.

Śrīdhara in the *Kandali* gives *Ulapa* as an example of a grass, wheat as an example of *Auṣadhi* (annual), the *Ketaki* (*Pandanus odoratissimus*) and the *Vijapura* (*Citrus medica*) as examples of *Avatānas* (Vitapas, arboraceous plants), the *Kovidāra* (*Bauhinia*) as an example of flower- and fruit-bearing tree, and the *Udumvara* (*Ficus glomerata*) as an example of a *Vanaspati* (flowerless fruit-bearing tree).

Udayana in the *Kiraṇāvali* notes the *Kuṣmānda* (a species of *Cucurbita*) as an instance of a creeper (*Latā*), and the palms *त्रालादयः* as modifications of the grasses (*Triṇas*).

Amara:—*Amara*, the lexicographer, in the *Vanauṣadhi-varga* and the *Vaiṣyavarga* (enumeration of wild plants and of food-grains) gives some interesting particulars. (1) The trees (the flowering *Brikṣas* and the flowerless *Vanaspatis*) are fruit-bearing, and possess woody stems काष्ठदातृ or trunks (प्रकाष्ठः—प्रकाष्ठः सन्धः स्यान्मूलात् शाखाविसरः). Next come (2) arboraceous plants and shrubs (वृक्ष, हस्तशाखाश्लिष्टः वृक्षः) bearing flowers as well as fruits. (3) The *Latās* are next noticed, flowering plants with herbaceous stems, some of them creeping on the ground (प्रतानिनी), others succulent (गुल्मिनी), others twining or voluble (मूलाद्यायंगता लता, वृक्षगामिनी लता—*Amara*, cf. *Mukuta*, तरुमूलात् प्रभृति वृक्षाद्यप्यर्थेन गता गुडुच्यादि लतापि अवरोहः—others call this शिफा). Cf. *Suśruta*—लताः प्रतानवत्यः गुल्मिन्यष्ट. (4) Next come the *Auśadhis* (in the narrower sense), herbaceous plants bearing fruit with or without flowers, and dying or withering away after fructification. Some instances of *Kandaśāka* (tubers, rhizomes, corms) are noticed, e.g. the *Palāndu* (the onion, पलान्दुस्तु मुकुन्दकः), the *Laṣuna* (garlic, महाकन्द), etc. But the graminaceae enumerated in the *Vaiṣyavarga* are the chief instances of the *Auśadhis*—plants that die after fructification. These are cultivated *Auśadhis*, but their affinities with the next class, the grasses (*Triṇas*), are also noted (e.g. धान्यं त्रीहि सप्तकरीः सद्योगुच्छस्तृणादीनाम् तृणधान्यानि नीधाराः। नाद्दीनालं च काष्ठोष्म्य). Next are enumerated (5) the *Triṇas*, grasses, of which the characteristic is the formation of *gulmas* (culms of grasses with annular knots from which leaves spring—सद्यो गुल्मे तृणादीनामकाष्ठद्रुमगुच्छयोः). It is worthy of note that, in the enumeration of the grasses, the bamboo is considered as a sort of giant grass

(तृणध्वज, grass flag, तृणेषु ध्वज इव). The reeds (नलादयः) are also placed among the grasses (नलादयस्तृणं गर्भुष्याशाकप्रमुखमपि । प्रमुखशब्दात् नोबाराद्याः). (6) Finally, the Palmaceæ (including the cocoanut, date, areca, and other palms) are classed as Tree-grasses, probably because, like the grasses, they are endogens characterised by spikes and parallel veins. तृणद्रुमः । (तृणरानादयस्तालः नारकेलस्तु लाङ्गली etc., एते च हितालसहितास्तयः सन्तुः केतकी ताली सन्तुरा च तृणद्रुमाः, —cf. also the *Râjanighantu*).

I may add that Amara places parasitical plants among the *Latâs* (चन्दा वृथादनो । वृथरुहा । जीवन्तिकेत्यपि). They climb trees and feed upon them. These are to be distinguished from climbing plants, like the *Guduchi* (*Tinospora cordifolia*), which have separate roots of their own. They are also to be distinguished from the adventitious roots descending from the branches of trees, like the *Ficus religiosa*, which are usually termed *avarohâs* (अवरोहाः). The name *siphâ* is ordinarily applied to the rootlets and suckers by which the tendrils of various creepers are attached to the soil. (शाखाश्लिषा अवरोहः स्यात् । वटादेः शाखायाः अपलक्षिनी शिषा । मूलाचार्यं गता लता । मूलादूर्ध्वं गता लता स्यात्—Amara with Bhânui Dikṣita's commentary. But the Mukuta notes :—तस्मिन्मूलात् प्रभृति वृथाग्रपर्यन्तगता गुदुच्यादि लतार्थं अवरोहः ।) The *Guduchi* is also called चन्दादनो, चिन्नरुहा ।

The Hindu Materia Medica mentions *Âkâśavallî*, lit. sky-creeper, a name which seems to have been originally intended for some orchids; also *Plava* (lit. floating), weeds that float in stagnant ponds, and *Saivâla*, mosses and lichens (e.g. दूर्वाकमेरुमवशैवालं नलेन क्षपितं पोतं शुक्रमेहहरं—*Chakrapâṇi-Samgraha*, also *Bhâva-*

Prakâśa). These are not classified, but like the mushrooms must come under the *Pâkaniṣṭha auṣadhis*, Auṣadhis that die after maturing, without bringing forth flowers or fruits.

SECTION 2.

ELEMENTARY IDEAS OF PLANT PHYSIOLOGY.

Characteristics of Plant-Life.

The *Nyâya-vindu-tikâ* of Dharmottara, the Buddhist scholiast, notices the phenomenon of sleep (contraction of leaves in the night) in certain plants (स्नापः रात्री पचसङ्कोचः).

Udayana notices in plants the phenomena of life, death, sleep, waking, disease, drugging, transmission of specific characters by means of ova, movement towards what is favourable and away from what is unfavourable (पृष्ठादयः प्रतिनियतभोक्त्र्यधिष्ठिताः जीवनमरस्तन्मज्जागरतोग्रभेषजप्रयोग-योनिसन्नातीयानुबन्धानकूलोपगमप्रतिकूलापगमादिभ्यः प्रसिद्धशरीरवत् — Udayana, पृषिणीनिरूपणम्). I may add that metaphors drawn from the heliotropic movements of the *Sûryya-mukhi*-flower are among the stock-in-trade of Sanskrit poetry and belles-lettres.

The Jaina writer Guṇaratna, in his commentary on the *Śaddarśana-Samuchchaya* (circa 1350 A.D.), enumerates the following characteristics of the plant-life : (1) stages of infancy, youth and age ; (2) regular growth ; (3) various kinds of movement or action connected with sleep, waking, expansion and contraction in response to touch, also movement towards a support or prop ; (4) withering on wound or laceration of

organs; (5) assimilation of food according to the nature of the soil; (6) growth or decay by assimilation of suitable or unsuitable food as prescribed in the science of the diseases of plants and their treatment (वृक्षापुर्वेद); (7) disease; (8) recovery from diseases or wounds by the application of drugs; (9) dryness or the opposite, due to the sap which answers to the chyle (रस) in animals; and (10) special food favourable to impregnation. (विशिष्टद्विद्वदादिमन्त्रं विशिष्टस्त्रीशरीरवत् यथा स्त्रीशरीरस्य तथाविधद्विद्वदपूरणात् पुत्रादिप्रसवर्न तथा वनस्पतिशरीरस्यापि तत्पूरणात् पुष्पफलादिप्रसवर्नः।) Even the *Vanaspatis* (flowerless, but fruit-bearing trees) may be made to flower (cf. Vārah-mihira's recipes for the treatment of plants for similar purposes; cf. Guṇaratna, *Tarkarahasyadīpikā*, *Jainamāta*, Śloka 49).

Śankara Miśra in the *Upaskāra* notes as an additional characteristic the growth of organs (or tissues) by natural recuperation after wound or laceration (भग्नवृक्षसंरोदधे च, *Upaskāra*, Chap. IV., Ahnika 2, Sūtra 5, S. B. H., Vol. VI.).

Guṇaratna gives a list of plants that exhibit the phenomena of sleep and waking (सनीप्रपुष्पादिसिद्धेश्वरकामुन्दक-वल्गुलागल्यानलकोकतिप्रभृतीनां स्वापविबोधनः, *ibid.*). He also notices the sensitiveness to touch of plants like the *Mimosa pudica*, लज्जावती लता, which show a manifest reaction in the form of contraction, लज्जालूप्रभृतीनां हस्तादिसंस्पर्शात् यवसङ्कोचादिका परिष्फुटक्रिया उपलभ्यते (*ibid.*).

Sexuality.

Very vague ideas were entertained as to the sexual characters of plants. The pollen is called *Rajas*, *puṣpa*,

prasuna—names which are also applied to the female menstruum—and Amara expressly states that for females and flowers these elements (and the terms signifying them) are the same (स्त्रीणां मुमनसां पुष्पं प्रसूनं समम्—Amara, *Vanaśadhivarga*). Charaka (*Dridhavalā*), indeed, distinguishes between the male and the female *vatsa* (or *kutaja*), considering the variety that bears white flowers and large fruits as male (बृहत्फलश्चेतपुष्पेः पुमान्, *Holarrhena antidysenterica*), and that which bears red or yellow flowers and small fruits as female (श्यावारुणानुपुष्पे स्त्री—चक्षितकूटन, *Wrightia tinctoria*; Charaka, *Kalpasthāna*, Chap. V.; but this is hopelessly wrong. Even these vague ideas were afterwards completely lost, and the *Râjanighantu* tells us of a grotesque division of plants into male, female, and hermaphrodite, based on the slender or stout, the soft or hard, the long or short, the simple or mixed character of the stems and flowers! (*Râjanighantu*, जनूपादि प्रथमो वर्गः स्त्रीपुंनपुंसकत्वेन त्रैविध्यं स्यादरेष्वपि, etc.).

Consciousness.

The Hindu Scriptures teach that plants have a sort of dormant or latent consciousness, and are capable of pleasure and pain (जनःसंज्ञा भवत्येते सुखदुःखसमन्विताः). Chakrapāṇi notes in the *Bhūmumati* that the consciousness of plants is a sort of stupefied (darkened or comatose) consciousness (पुष्पास्तु चेतनावन्तोगपि तमश्चक्षुर्ज्ञानतया शास्त्रोपदेशविषया एव).

Udayana also notes that plants have a dormant unmanifested consciousness which is extremely dull (चित्तिनन्दान्तःसंज्ञिता, etc.).

The *Mahābhārata* adds that plants are sensitive to heat and cold, to the sound of thunder, etc., as well as to odours both pleasant and unpleasant :—

उष्मतो ज्ञायते पर्यं त्वक् फलं पुष्पमेव च ।
 ज्ञायते शीघ्र्यते चापि स्पर्शस्तेनाच विद्यते ॥
 वाय्वगन्धशानि-निर्घोषैः फलं पुष्पं विशीर्यते ।
 श्रोत्रेण गृह्यते शब्दस्तस्माच्छृण्वन्ति पादपाः ।
 वज्रो वेष्टयते वृक्षं सञ्ज्ञेतश्चैव गच्छति ।
 नखद्रुहश्च नागोर्गन्धिं तस्मात् पश्यन्ति पादपाः ॥
 पुष्पापुष्पैस्तथा गन्धैर्धूपश्च विविधैरपि ।
 शरीराः पुष्पिताः सन्ति तस्माच्छिघ्रान्ति पादपाः ॥
 पादैः सलिल-पानाच्च व्याधीनाश्चापि दृशेनात् ।
 व्याधिप्रतिक्रियत्वाच्च विद्यते रसनं द्रुमे ॥
 वक्त्रेणोत्पलनालेन यथोर्ध्वं जलमाददेत् ।
 तथा पवनसंयुक्तः पादैः पिबति पादपः ॥
 सुखदुःखयोश्च ग्रहणात् क्षिप्तस्य च विरोहणात् ।
 जीवं पश्यामि वृक्षाख्यानचैतन्यं न विद्यते ॥ शान्तिपर्व, महाभारत :

CHAPTER V.

HINDU CLASSIFICATION OF ANIMALS.

SECTION 1.

CLASSIFICATION OF ANIMALS.

Charaka.

Charaka mentions four primary divisions :—

(1) *Jarāyuja*, born from the uterus, or, rather, placentalia, viviparous (no a-placental mammals were known), *e.g.* man, the quadrupeds, etc.

(2) *Andaja*, born of an ovum (egg), comprising fishes, reptiles, and birds.

(3) *Svedaja* (or *Uṣmaja*), born of moisture and heat, spontaneously or a-sexually generated, *e.g.* worms, mosquitoes, etc.

(4) *Udvija*, born of vegetable organisms (भूतानां चतुर्विधा योनिर्भवति जराण्यस्रस्तेदोद्भिदः—*Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. III. रक्षेका योनिः अपरिसंख्येयभेदा भवन्ति भूतानामाकृतिविशेषा परिसंख्येयत्वात्—*Ibid.*).

Praśastapāda.

Praśastapāda begins with two great divisions: (1) *Ayonija*, animals that are a-sexually generated, of small dimensions (सुद्रुमन्तु); (2) *Yonija*, sexually generated, *i.e.* from the union of a sperm and a germ element. The latter are subdivided into (a) *Jarāyuja*, lit. placen-

talia, viviparous (no a-placental mammals were known), and (b) *Andaja*, oviparous. Man, the quadrupeds (domesticated and wild), etc., are given as examples of viviparous animals, and birds, *Sarīśripas* (reptiles, etc.) of oviparous animals. Udayana in the *Kiraṇāvalī* notes that *Jarāyu* means the placenta (गर्भवेष्टनचर्मपटलं जरायुः, cf. Śrīdhara in the *Kandālī*, जरायुरिति गर्भाशयस्य अभिधानं तेन वेष्टितं जायते इति जरायुजम्). Udayana adds that the term *Sarīśripa* includes insects and fishes as well as reptiles, these being all oviparous (सरोमृषाः परितः प्रसर्पणशीलाः सर्पकोटनत्वाद्यः—पृथिवीनिरूपणम्).

Patanjali.

The a-sexually generated animals, as we have seen, are also called *Kṣudrajantus* (lit. small animals). Pātaṇjali in the *Mahābhāṣya* gives several alternative definitions (or descriptions) of this class of animals. They are defined (1) as animals without bones, अनस्थिकाः क्षुद्रजन्तवः; or (2) as animals that do not possess any blood of their own, येषां स्वं शोणितं नास्ति ते क्षुद्रजन्तवः; or (3) as numbering more than a thousand in a palmful, i.e. minute in size; or (4) as not easily crushed; or (5) as comprehending all animals up to the ichneumon (in the animal series), अथवा नकुलपर्यन्ताः क्षुद्रजन्तवः—*Mahābhāṣya*, 2-4-1.

Suśruta.

Suśruta mentions four great divisions: (1) *San-svedaja*, born of moisture and heat: this division is mentioned first, as Dalvana notes, because moisture and heat are essential factors in the generation of all forms of animal life, including the classes that follow;

(2) *Jarâyuja*, viviparous or placental; (3) *Andaja*, oviparous; and (4) *Udviija*, bursting forth (from the ground, or perhaps from some previous unmanifest shape, e.g. frogs, coccidæ, etc.). The second, third, and fourth classes are mentioned in the order of their importance. Subsequently the order of enumeration is changed: (1) *Jarâyuja*, (2) *Andaja*, (3) *Svedaja*, (4) *Udviija*. One reading gives the order: (1) *Svedaja*, (2) *Andaja*, (3) *Udviija*, and (4) *Jarâyuja*. Some commentators point out that the order in the text (whatever that may be) is intended to indicate the order of creation by Brahmâ.

Suśruta mentions man, *Vyâla* (carnivorous quadrupeds), and *Pasu* (herbivorous quadrupeds) as examples of the viviparous; birds, snakes, and *Sarîsripas* as examples of the oviparous; *Krimis*, *Kîtas*, and *Pipîlikâs* (worms, insects, ants, etc.) as examples of the moisture-born; and frogs and the coccidæ (the coccinella) as examples of the animals that "burst forth" (eruptive or metamorphic?). Dalvana notes that the divisions are really cross-divisions (योनिसेकर), and intended to be such, as the natural divisions of Jiva and species are not all exclusively oviparous or exclusively viviparous. For example, among birds (पक्षिणः, winged animals), bats and *Valâkâs* are viviparous (पलाका ननुकादयः नरायुजाः); indeed, *Valâkâs* are some of them oviparous and some viviparous (पक्षिषु पलाका नरायुजा चकृन्नाथ). Among snakes, the *Ahipatâkâs*, a species of non-venomous colubrine snakes, are viviparous (ovo-viviparous?). Among the moisture-born, there are some kinds of ants (पिपिलिकाः) which also lay

eggs or burst forth (from the ground, or perhaps from some previous unmanifest shape) (स्वस्वेदनेष्वपि काश्चित् पिपीलिका चक्षुना उद्भिज्जातः).

The oviparous animals are divided by Suśruta into birds, snakes, *Sarīśripas*, etc. Dalvana notes that the *Sarīśripas* include fishes and *Makaras* (sea-fish with fierce teeth, हिंसदंष्ट्रकाः), and the "et cetera" comprehends tortoises and crocodiles (सरीसृपाः शीघ्रगामिनः कृष्णसर्पादयो नीनमकरादयो वा प्रभृतिग्रहणेन कूस्मेनक्रादोनां ग्रहणम्)! The "moisture-born" are due to the moisture and heat either of the earth or of organisms (स्वस्वेदनाः भुवः शरीरस्य च संस्वेदात् कृष्णः जाताः). Of these, the *Krimis* (worms) arise from the moisture of the faeces in the bowels (कृमयः कोष्ठपुरीषादिवाय्वसम्भवाः—Dalvana); from putrefying dead bodies (शव—Suśruta; cf. शरीरे कियद् बेलानन्तरं समुत्पन्नानि कृम्यादोनां कथं चैतन्यम्—Gūṇaratna, *Tarka-rahasya-dīpikā* (*Jainamātām*); from decomposing curd or milk (e.g. वर्षासु च स्वेदादिना जनतिद्वीयसैव कालेन दध्याद्यवयवा एव चलन्तः पृतनादिकृमिरूपा उपलभ्यन्ते—Jayanta, *Nyāya-Manjarī*, *Āhnika* 7, भूतचैतन्यपक्ष).

The second class, *Kītas*, noticed among the moisture-born, include the scorpions, the six-spotted venomous insect *ṣadvindu*, etc. (कीटा वृश्चिकषट्त्रिविन्दु प्रभृतयः—Dalvana). Of these the scorpions arise from cow-dung, excreta of snakes, rotten wood (कथं गोमयाद् वृश्चिकः जायते—Pātanjali, *Mahābhāṣya*, 1-4-3); cf. also Suśruta, *Kalpasthāna*, Chap. VII.

The third class, *Pipīlikās*, ants and the like insects, Dalvana notes, are born of moisture and heat, as well as of eggs, and sometimes burst forth from the ground (भुवमुद्भिज्ज जाता उद्भिज्जा—Dalvana). The gnats and mos-

quitoes (दशमशकादयः) are also usually placed among the moisture-born. An *anda* (egg) is described as oval, of the form of a *pesi* (अण्डं पेशिकाकारपञ्चुलं—Dalvana; cf. Śrīdhara, *Kandali*, अण्डं विम्बं तेन वेष्टितं जायते तत् अण्डनं, पृथिवीनिरूपणं).

Chhândogya and Sankara.

It may be noted that the *Chhândogya Upaniṣad* classifies animals on the basis of their *vīja* (ovum or seed) as three-fold:—(1) *Andaja*, born of eggs; (2) *Jivaja*, viviparous; and (3) *Udvijja*. Śankara explains that the *udvijja* animals arise from vegetable organisms (उद्भिन् स्यावरं ततो जातम् उद्विज्जम्), which is also Charaka's view, as we have seen; but unlike Charaka, Śankara holds that the *svedaja* animals must be included partly under the oviparous, and partly under the *udvijja* (vegetable-born) class (अण्डनोद्विज्जयोरेव यथासम्भवमनन्तभावः—*Chhândogya*, Prapâthaka 6, part 3).

Evidently the idea is, that though vegetable organisms may pass off into animal, there cannot be generation without *vīja* (seed or ovum), and inorganic matter without *vīja* (seed or ovum) cannot give rise to animal life. Pâtanjali, in the *Mahâbhâṣya* (circa 150 B.C.), mentions the opposed view, which holds that not only animal organisms but also vegetable organisms, e.g. grasses, grow from inorganic matter. The *Dûrvâ* grass, for example, can grow from deposits of the hair of goats and cows, just as scorpions are seen to develop out of cow-dung. Pâtanjali notes the orthodox Sâṅkhya-Vedânta explanation that these are not cases of growth (or transformation) but merely of coming out (अपक्कानन्ति),

कथं गोमयाद् वृश्चिको जायते गोलोमाविलोमेभ्यः दूषो जायते इति अपक्रामन्ति
ता वसुभ्यः—*Mahābhāṣya*, 1-4-3.

The Dietary Animals in Charaka and Suśruta.

In noticing different kinds of meat for dietary purposes, Charaka gives a classification of animals (mammals and birds) which has only a practical (therapeutic) significance.

The dietic value of the flesh of any animal was conceived to depend mainly on its habitat and mode of life. Dietary animals (mammals and birds) were accordingly divided into eight classes (अष्टविधा योनिस्तेषाम्) :—

(1) *Prasaha*, carnivorous as well as non-carnivorous (*Chakrapāṇi*), comprehending land quadrupeds and birds that fall on their food with force.

(2) *Anūpa*, animals that live in marshy or water-logged lands or graze on river-banks.

(3) *Bhūśaya* or *Vileśaya*, animals that live in underground holes.

(4) *Vāriśaya*, aquatic animals, both fresh-water and oceanic.

(5) *Jalachara*, amphibious animals.

(6) *Jāṅgala*, animals that live in dry and elevated (hilly) jungle lands, mostly species of deer.

(7) *Viṣkīra*, birds that scatter their food in picking up; and

(8) *Pratuda*, birds that pierce or torment their food (worms and fruits) with the beak.

In the chapter on articles of diet, Suśruta gives a practical classification of (vertebrate) animals for dietary

purposes. Animals that find a place in this dietary are first divided into two classes: (1) *Anûpa*, animals that live in marshy or water-logged land (or in water); (2) *Jāngala*, animals that live in dry (hilly) jungle land. The *Jāngalas* are divided into five classes, and the *Anûpas* into eight. The thirteen classes are based on real and natural distinctions of food and habitat; they are for dietary purposes arranged under six conventional (or artificial) classes (त्रयोदशभेदा यदसु स्य जननूताः। संख्येयम् निर्देशादेव यदसंख्यायां लज्जायां यदग्रहणम् तेन यद्वर्गा इति नियमायेन—Dalvana, *Sâtrasthâna*, Chap. XXVII). These thirteen classes of dietary animals may be enumerated as follows:—

I. *Jāngala* animals—*Janghâla*, *Vişkira*, *Pratuda*, *Guhâśaya*, *Prasaha*, *Parṇamriga*, *Vileśaya* and *Grāmya*, and

II. *Anûpa* animals—*Kulechara*, *Plava*, *Kośastha*, *Pâdina*, and *Matsya*.

Of these, the *Matsyas* (fishes) are divided into two groups—fresh-water (*lit.* river-water) and sea-water fishes. Among the sea fishes, the *timi* and the *timin-gala* (whales? तिमिमहत्तमो मत्स्यः तिमिद्वलस्ततोऽपि महत्तमः—Dalvana) find a place, as also the *makara* (shark, हिंसदंष्ट्राकः—Dalvana).

The *Kośastha* (living in shells—mollusca) are distinguished from the *Matsyas* (fishes). In this class are enumerated *śankhas* (Conchifera), *śankhana* (smaller Conchifera), *śukti* (pearl-mussels), *sambuka* (*Helix*) with spiral shell (चावर्त्तकोशः—Dalvana), *valluka* (a species of *Helix*, according to some, अन्य सम्बुकभेदमाहुः—Dalvana), etc. Dalvana adds *vodika*, *jalaśukti*, and various species of *Helix* (बोडिकजलशुक्तिशम्बुकभेदा बहुविधा गृह्यन्ते).

The *Pâdinas*, aquatic animals having pedal (or long dorsal) appendages, comprise *kurmas* (oval or oblong-shaped tortoises, turtles), the *kumbhîras* (crocodiles, Emydosauria, Reptilia), *karkatas* (white and black crabs, Crustacea), the *śiśumâra* (a species of the Delphinidæ cetacea), muscular, with a sharp protruding snout, breathing with the blow-hole *out of the water*, probably a dolphin, as the long dorsal fin was taken for a sort of pedal appendage (दृढाकारोद्देवक्रः वह्निर्निश्वासं मुञ्चति सोऽपि द्विविधः बह्वलदोर्ध्वभेदः—Dalvana). The *Pâdinas* do not represent any natural division.

Of the other *Anûpa* animals (aquatic or amphibious animals), the *plavas* (*lit.* floating on the water) represent a class of birds (the Natatores and the Grallatores) exemplified by geese, ducks, cranes, etc.

The *Kulecharas* are herbivorous quadrupeds that frequent the banks of rivers and ponds, and comprise the elephant, the rhinoceros, the *Gāvaya* (*Bos gaurus*), the buffalo,* various species of deer, etc.

Of the land animals (*Jāngala*), three of the subdivisions represent birds, and five, mammals. The land birds are: (1) the *Prasaha* birds, birds of prey proper (Raptiores), comprising the vulture, kites, hawks, owls, etc. (Charaka's *Prasaha* is a much wider class); (2) the *Viṣkiras*, birds that scatter their food in picking up; and (3) the *Pratudas*, birds that pierce or torment their food (fruits or worms) with the beak. The last two classes comprehend between them the *Passeres* (proper and so-called), the *Scansores*, the *Rasores* and the *Columbæ*.

The remaining five classes of *Jāngala* animals are

mammals, with the exception of several species of *Vileśayas*, which are reptiles. The *Parṇamrigas* (arboreal animals) comprise the apes, sloths, squirrels, as also some of the reptiles and carnivora. Among the *Parṇamrigas*, the *Putighasa* is a kind of tree-cat giving out a pungent odour; the *Madgumuṣika* and the *Brikṣaśāyika* are arboreal rodents; and the *Avakuśa* is a species of cow-tailed monkey (*vide* Dalvana). The *Janghālas* are wild animals, herbivorous quadrupeds that are strong-legged and quick-footed, comprising various species of deer and antelopes.

The *Grāmyas* (*lit.* living in or about villages, domesticated quadrupeds) comprise the horse, the mule, the ass, the camel, the goat, the sheep, etc. They are non-carnivorous, being distinguished from the carnivorous quadrupeds (ऋष्याद—*Suśruta*, मांसाद—*Charaka*). Some are *Ekaśapha* (animals whose hoofs are not cloven) (ग्राम्यशब्देन च एकशफशब्देन च ग्राम्याः—शफः घुरः—*Dalvana*).

The *Guhāśayas* are carnivorous quadrupeds (ऋष्यादाः) living in natural caves or hollows. They comprise the lion, the tiger, the wolf, the hyena, the bear, the panther, the cat, the jackal, the *mrigēvaru*, etc. The *vrika* (wolf) is defined as a dog-like animal, small-sized (in comparison with the lion and the tiger). By the cat, here, wild-cats are meant. The *mrigēvaru* is described as a jackal-like animal that kills deer.

Finally come the *Vileśayas*, animals that live in holes or burrows, comprising various species of Rodents and Insectivora, and several species of Reptiles.

Snakes in Suśruta-Nāgârjuna.

The Snakes (Ophidæ) are especially noticed by Suśruta-Nāgârjuna in the chapters relating to Toxicology (*Kalpasthâna*, Chap. IV.). Five different genera or families are noticed, of which one is non-venomous and four venomous, including one hybrid and three pure or unmixed families. Of the last, (1) the *Darvîkaras* (कृष्णसर्पे, महाकृष्ण, पद्म, महापद्म, शङ्खपाली—Naia Tripudians, Naia Bungarus) are hooded, swift in their movements, diurnal in their habits, and bear on their hoods or their bodies the marks of chariot-wheels, ploughs, umbrellas, rhombs or cross-bands, goads, etc. (2) The *Mandaliis* (Vipera, Viperidæ?) are thick (पृचवः), slow-moving, nocturnal in their habits, and bear circles or rings on the body (आदशैमल्ल). Charaka adds that they are without hoods. (3) *Rajimats* also are without hoods, and nocturnal, and bear series of dots or marks, and are often of variegated colours on the upper parts and sides. Twenty-six varieties are named of the first, two of the second, and ten of the third.

Of the *Nirviṣas*, non-venomous snakes, twelve varieties are mentioned, including Boidæ (चक्रगर) and the Colubrine *Dendrophis* (वृषेश्वर). Of the *Vaikarajja* (hybrid) snakes, there are ten varieties, of which three are produced by the union of certain venomous species, and seven are secondary derivative forms.

The *Darvîkaras* are most deadly when young, the *Mandaliis* when middle-aged, the *Rajimats* when aged. Their poisons act differently, and an elaborate descrip-

tion is given of the action of the venom of each of the three venomous families.

Snakes in the Purāṇas.

The *Bhaviṣya Purāṇa* gives the following additional information. The *Nāgas* (Naiæ) copulate in the month of *Jyāistha* or *Āṣāḍha* (May or June), gestate during the rainy months that follow, and bring forth about two hundred and forty eggs in the month of *Kārtika* (November). Most of these are devoured by the parents, but those that are left break forth from the shell in about two months (or one month, according to the *Agni Purāṇa*).

Eggs of a golden hue like that of the (red) flowers of the *Calotropis gigantea* (मुवर्णीकैयर्षेनिभ) produce male young ones, those somewhat paler and of an elongated ovoid shape (खकौंदकमुवर्णीभात् दोषैराजीवसविभात्) bring forth female snakes, and those of the hue of the *Sirīṣa*-blossom hermaphrodite ones. By the seventh day the young snakes turn dark; in a fortnight (or twenty days, according to another account) the teeth come out. The poison is formed in the fangs (दंष्ट्रासु) in three weeks, and becomes deadly in the twenty-fifth night. In six months *Nāgas* shed the skin (कचुक).

In moving on the ground, the folds of the skin on the under surface alternately expand and contract, appearing to put out and draw in fine filament-like legs, about two hundred and forty in number. The joints on the skin (scales or scutes—मन्थक) are two hundred and forty in number (perhaps the sub-caudals were not counted).

Snakes are killed by men, mongooses, peacocks, *Chakoras* (a kind of partridge), scorpions, boars, cats, and the hoofs of oxen. Escaping death from these enemies, a *Nāga* may live for a hundred and twenty years. The term of life of the non-venomous snake is shorter, about seventy-five years (*Bhaviṣya Purāṇa*, पञ्चमस्कन्ध).

The *Agni Purāṇa* gives the total number of teeth (of a *Nāga*) as thirty-two, of which four (two on either side) are venomous, viz. *Kālarātri* and *Yamadutikā*, which appear to be the names of the fangs, and *Karālī* and *Makarī*, which seem to stand for two hard (maxillary) teeth accompanying the two fangs (cf. also Charaka—*Dṛḍhavaḥ*, *Chikitsāsthāna*, XXIII., विषचिकित्सितम्).

Umāsvatī's Classification of Animals.

A more thorough classification of animals is found in the ancient Jaina work, the *Tattvārthadhigama* of Umāsvatī, which the Jaina chronological lists enable us to assign with great probability to the fourth or fifth decennium after Christ (*circa* 40 A.D.). Umāsvatī's classification is a good instance of classification by series, the number of senses possessed by the animal being taken to determine its place in the series. Perhaps only senses actively determining the life-habits were counted.

I. First come animals with two senses, viz. touch (as evidenced by contractility of tissue) and taste (as involved in the selection and rejection of food). This division comprises—

- (a) *Apādika* (Vermes without lateral appendages, Scolecids).

- (b) *Nāpuraka* (ring-like, with pendants, Vermes with unsegmented lateral appendages, Annelids).
- (c) *Gandūpada* (knotty-legged, Arthropoda, including Crustacea, Myriapoda, etc.).
- (d) Some forms of Mollusca, e.g. *Śankha* (Conchifera, Lamelli - branchiata), *Śuktika* (Pearl - mussel, Lamelli-branchiata), and *Sambuka* (Helix).
- (e) *Jalūka*, Leeches (Annelids).

II. Next come the animals with three senses, namely smell in addition to the primordial senses of touch and taste involved in the contraction of tissues and the appropriation of food. Here also well-developed and active senses alone were perhaps intended; rudimentary or dormant senses were not reckoned. This division comprises—

- (a) *Pipīlikā*, Ants (Formicidæ, Hymenoptera).
- (b) *Rohiṇikā*, Red-ants (Formicidæ, Hymenoptera).
- (c) *Upachikā*, *Kunthu*, *Tuburaka*, Bugs and Fleas (Hemiptera, Hemimetabola).
- (d) *Trapusaviṇa* and *Karpāsāsthikā*, Cucumber- and Cotton-weevils and Lice (Aptera, Ametabola).
- (e) *Śatapadī* and *Utpataka*, Spring-tails (Aptera-Ametabola).
- (f) *Triṇapatra*, Plant-Lice.
- (g) *Kāṣṭha-hāraka*, Termites, White ants (Neuroptera, Hemimetabola).

III. Then come the animals with four well-developed and active senses, i.e. sight, smell, taste, and touch. This division comprises—

- (a) *Bhramara*, *Varāṇa*, and *Sāranga*, Bees, Wasps, and Hornets (Hymenoptera, Holometabola).

- (b) *Makṣikā*, *Puttikā*, *Danśa*, and *Maśaka*, Flies, Gnats, Gad-flies, and Mosquitoes (Diptera, Holometabola).
- (c) *Vriśchika* and *Nandyāvarta*, Scorpions and Spiders (Arachnida, Arthropoda).
- (d) *Kīta*, Butterflies and Moths (Lepidoptera, Holometabola), and
- (e) *Patanga*, Grasshoppers and Locusts (Orthoptera, Hemimetabola).

IV. Finally come the animals (man and the *Tiryyak-yonis*) with five well-developed and active senses. Omitting man, this division comprises—

- (a) *Matsya*, Fishes.
- (b) *Uraga*.
- (c) *Bhujanga*.
- (d) *Pakṣi*, Birds, and
- (e) *Chatuspada*, Quadrupeds.

Uraga and *Bhujanga* in popular use mean reptiles; but here evidently *Bhujanga* is taken to mean oviparous limbed animals (limbed reptiles and Batrachians) and not creatures whose movements are crooked or in the form of a bent bow; and *Uraga* stands for apodal reptiles, including snakes (Ophidæ).

It will be seen that the first three divisions fall under the Invertebrata, and the fourth is identical with the Vertebrata.

This last division (the Vertebrata) is sub-divided on a different basis, viz. the mode of reproduction. The sub-divisions are three:—

A.—*Andaja*, oviparous (Pisces, Reptilia, and Batra-

chia), *e.g.* *Sarpa* (Snakes, Ophidia, Reptilia), *Godha* (Varanidæ Lizards, Reptilia), *Krikalâsa* (Chameleons, Reptilia), *Grihagolika* (Common Lizards, Lacertilia), *Matsya* (Pisces), *Kûrma* (Tortoises, Chelonia, Reptilia), *Nakra* (Crocodiles, Reptilia), *Śiśumâra* (Dolphin or Porpoise, Cetacea), and Birds proper with feather wings—the *Lomapakṣa pakṣis*.

Porpoises are erroneously put here, being really viviparous like other Cetacea. Frogs are not mentioned in this list. The omission is strange. Perhaps (as in *Suśruta*) frogs were believed to be *Udviṣṣa* (eruptive or metamorphic) and not *Andaja* (oviparous). But *Suśruta* mentions the frogs after the quadrupedal and centipedal Reptilia (*Kanava*, *Godheraka*, *Galagolika*, and *Śatapadî*).

B.—*Jarâyujja*, mammals born with placenta, including all mammals other than the *Potaja* (here *Jarâyujja* is used in a restricted sense): (1) Man, (2) Cow, (3) Buffalo, (4) Goat and Sheep, (5) Horse, (6) Ass, (7) Camel, (8) Deer, (9) Yak (*Chamara*), (10) Hog, (11) Bos *Gavæus* (*Gāvaya*)—Ungulata, (12) Lion, (13) Tiger, (14) Bear, (15) Panther, (16) Dog, (17) Jackal, (18) Cat (Carnivora), etc.

The Apes, though not expressly mentioned, are also to be included.

C.—*Potaja*, a class of placental mammals comprising the Deciduata with the exception of Man, the Apes, and the Carnivora, *e.g.* *Śallaka* (Porcupine, Rodentia), *Hasti* (Elephant, Proboscidea), *Śvavit* and *Lâpaka* (Hedgehogs and other creatures that lap up, Insectivora), *Śāsa* and *Śayika* (Hare, Rabbit, and Squirrel, Rodentia), *Nakula* (Ichneumon, which though carnivorous is

supposed to come under the Deciduata), *Mūṣik* (Mice, Rodentia), and the *Charma-pakṣa Pakṣis*, so-called birds with leathern wings (Bats, Chiroptera) e.g. *Valguli* (Flying-Fox), *Pakṣivirāḍa* (Flying-Cat, Micro-Chiroptera) and *Jalūkā* (apparently meaning blood-sucking Bats or Vampires, though these are scarcely found in the Old World).

The *Potaja* class thus comprises the following Deciduata: Proboscidea, Rodentia, Insectivora, and Chiroptera.

The term *Potaja* is intended to signify that these animals are born without the placenta which is thrown off as an afterbirth, whereas such of the *Jarāyujas* as are not *Potajas* are born with the placenta attached to the embryo. But it is not easy to explain why Man, the Apes, and the Carnivora should not also be reckoned among the *Potajas*. An explanation is suggested below (p. 200).

कृम्यादीनां पिपीलिकादीनां धमरादीनां मनुष्यादीनां च यथासंस्थानेकैक-
वृद्धानि इन्द्रियाणि भवन्ति । यथाक्रमम् । तद् यथा कृम्यादीनां चपादिक-
नृपुरक-गच्छूपद-शङ्ख-शुक्लिक-शम्बूक-जलूका-प्रभृतीनां स्पृशेन्नरसनेन्द्रिये भवतः ।
पिपीलिका रोहिणिका-उपविका-कुम्भुगुरुरक-वपुमचीन-कर्पासास्थिका-शत-
पञ्चुतपतक-नृपपत्र-काष्ठहारक-प्रभृतीनां चोष्णि स्पृशेन्नरसनघ्राणानि । धमर-
वरट-सारङ्ग-मणिकापुस्तिका-दंश-मशक-वृश्चिक-नन्द्यावर्त-कोट-पतङ्गादीनां
चत्वारि स्पृशेन्नरसनघ्राणचक्षुषि । शेषानां च तिर्य्यग्योनिजानां मत्स्योरगभु-
जङ्गपक्षि-चतुष्पदानां त्रयैर्वा च नारकमनुष्यदेवानां पञ्चेन्द्रियाणि । (Uṃā-
svati, *Tattvarthādhigama*, Chap. II., Sutra 24).

जरायुजानां मनुष्य-गो-महिषावाविकाश-खरोष्ठ-मृग-चमर-वराह-गवय-
सिंह-प्रायश्चे-ह्रीपि-श-भृगाल-माञ्जरादीनाम् । अखडनानां सर्प-गोधा-कृकलाम-
गृहगोलिका-मत्स्य-कूर्म-नङ्ग-शिशुमारादीनाम् । पक्षिणां च लोमपक्षाणां-हंस-
चाप-शुक-गृध्र-श्वेन-पारावत-काक-नयूर-मद्गु-वक-बलाकादीनाम् । पोतनानां

शङ्ख-हस्ति-श्याविज्ञापक-शङ्ख-शायिका-नकुल-शूषिकादीनाम् चर्मेपक्षिणां च पञ्चाणां जलुका-पल्लुलि-भारख-पक्षिविराळादीनां गर्भेनम् । (Umāsvati, *ibid.*, Chap. II., Sūtra 34).

SECTION 2.

RECAPITULATION.

The ancient Hindu classification of animals, as gathered from the authorities mentioned above, may be briefly summarised thus :—

A.—*Kṣudrajantus*, boneless and without (red) blood. Invertebrata, divided into—

- (a) *Ayonija*, a-sexually generated, e.g. the *Svedaja*, born of moisture and heat, and the *Udviija* (eruptive or metamorphic, e.g. the *coccinella*); and
- (b) *Yonija*, sexually generated, e.g. the *Andaja*, oviparous.

But some are both a-sexually and sexually generated, being both *Svedajas* and *Andajas*, or *Udviijas* and *Andajas*.

The *Kṣudrajantus* (Invertebrata) comprise—

- (I.) The *Krimis*, Vermes : (a) *Apādikas* without lateral appendages (*cf.* *Scolecids*), (b) *Nūpurakas*, Annelids (a section), (c) *Gandūpadas*, Arthropoda (a section).
- (II.) The *Jalūkās*, Leeches, of which twelve species are described, six venomous and six innocuous (*cf.* *Sūsruta's* careful description, *Sūtrasththāna*, Chap. XIII).
- (III.) *Kośasthas*, Shelled Animals, some forms of Mollusca, e.g. the *Śankhas* (*Conchifera*), the

Śuktikas (pearl-mussels), the *Sambukas* (spiral-shelled *Helix*), the *Vodikas*, etc.

(IV.) Then the Insects, typified by the Ants, comprising—

- (a) *Pipīlikā*, *Rohinikā* (ants, Hymenoptera).
- (b) *Upachikā*, *Kunthu*, *Tuburaka* (bugs and flies, Hemiptera).
- (c) Cucumber- and cotton-lice (Aptera).
- (d) *Śatapadī*, *Utpataka* (spring-tails, Aptera).
- (e) *Triṇapatra*, grass- or plant-lice (Aptera).
- (f) *Termītes* (Neuroptera).

(V.) Insects typified by the Hexopoda, comprising—

- (a) *Bhramara*, *Varāṭa*, *Sāranga*, bees, wasps, and hornets.
- (b) *Makṣikā*, *Puttikā*, *Danśa*, *Maśaka*, flies, gnats, gadflies, and mosquitoes.
- (c) *Vriśchika* and *Nandyāvarta*, scorpions and spiders (Arachnida, Arthropoda).
- (d) *Kīta*, butterflies and moths; and
- (e) *Patanga*, grasshoppers and locusts.

Suśruta-Nāgārjuna names six varieties of ants, six varieties of flies, five of mosquitoes (including one marine and one mountain kind), eight varieties of *Śatapadīs* (centipedes), thirty varieties of scorpions, and sixteen of spiders (*Lutās*). Of the *Kītas*, the glow-worm and the *Tailakīta* (lit. oil-worm) are said to be luminous (phosphorescent, cf. *Rājanighantu* खद्योतवैलकोटी).

B.—The *Tiryakyoni* animals, sexually generated animals other than such of the *Ovipara* as are included under the *Kṣudrojantu*, in other words, sexually generated

animals possessing bones and blood—corresponding to the Vertebrata—comprise the following classes :—

I. *Andaja*, oviparous—

- (a) The *Matsyas*, fishes, divided into river-water fishes and sea fishes. Suśruta names eleven species of the latter. The *Timi* (whale?) is reckoned as a sea-fish. The *Makara* (shark) is also mentioned, but the *Kurmas*, *Kumbhîras*, and *Śiśumâras* (tortoises, crocodiles, and dolphins) are excluded from the class, as also the so-called shell-fish, being placed among the *Pâdinas* and the *Kośasthas* respectively.
- (b) The *Uragas*, apodal reptiles, including the *Sarpas* (snakes, *Ophidia*). Five classes of snakes are mentioned, one non-venomous, three venomous, and one hybrid. Eighty varieties of snakes are named, but the classification is based on superficial characters, *e.g.* markings on the scales, etc., and do not touch any anatomical peculiarities. The pathological observations regarding the distinct action of the poisons of different orders seem to be good.
- (c) *Bhujangas*, oviparous animals with lateral, pedal appendages, both Reptiles and Batrachians. Many of these are quadrupedal and five-clawed (चतुष्पादाः षोढाः पञ्चनसाः—*Dalvana*).

The *Bhujangas* include :—

1. *Godha*, *Grihagolika* and *Krikalâsa* (*Varantas* lizards, common lizards, and chameleons). Suśruta names four varieties of the

Kanava, a species of chameleon-like lizards (cf. *Lādyāyana* quoted by Dalvana, *Kalpasthāna*, Chap. VIII.), also six varieties of *Galagolika* (a species of lizards), and five varieties of *Godheraka*, Varanus-like lizards, but smaller in size.

Suśruta mentions the frogs (*Udvija*, eruptive or metamorphic?) after the quadrupedal and centipedal Reptilia (*Kanava*, *Godheraka*, *Galagolika*, and *Śatapadi*). Eight species of frogs are named. The frogs are explained by the mythologist to have arisen from dirty water in the rainy season. . . प्रावृदकाले जलः (i.e. महेन्द्रगुप्तात्) मखोदके जाताः (cf. Dalvana, *Kalpasthāna*, Chap. VIII.).

2. *Kārmās* and *Nakras*, tortoises and crocodiles (*Chelonia* and *Emydosauria*, Reptilia). Some species of the former are oval, others elongated (चतुर्लुदोपादिभेदाः).
3. *Śīsumāras*, the Delphinidæ (Odontocete cetacea).

Suśruta's *Pādinas* (aquatic animals having pedal or long dorsal appendages) are a conventional class formed for practical dietary purposes, and include (2) and (3) and also the *Karkatas*, crabs (Crustacea). Umāsvati's *Bhujanga* class, being a natural sub-division of Vertebrates, does not include Crustacea, which are rightly placed among the Invertebrates.

- (d) *Lomapakṣa pakṣi*, winged animals with feathery wings, birds proper. These are oviparous, while the winged animals with leather wings (चर्मपक्ष्यपक्षिणाः) are placentalia of the Deciduata class (पोतजाः).

The Birds proper are divided into four classes :—

- (1) *Plavas*, aquatic or amphibious birds, comprising the Natatores and the Grallatores. Various species are described.
- (2) *Viṣkiras*, those that scatter their food in picking up.
- (3) *Pratudas*, those that pierce or torment their food (fruits or grains).

The enumeration of the species under (2) and (3) shows that these two classes included the Passeres (veræ and so-called), the Scan-sores, the Rasores, and the Columbæ.

- (4) *Prasahas*, birds of prey proper (Raptores).

Dalvana's descriptions of deer and birds are precise, turning upon coloration, habits of life, etc., e.g. the descriptions of the Ruru, the Kâraṇḍava, and the Kanka, expressly quoted from some (unnamed) hand-books :—

कूलेचरमाह . . . रुरुः शरदि शृङ्गत्यागी । तल्लघवी उच्यते—

“विकटबहुविपाशः शम्बराकारदेहः मलिलतटचरित्वात् सञ्चरेभ्यः विषिवः ।

सजति शरदि शृङ्गं रौति” —इत्यसौ रुरुः स्यात् ।

कारखवः शुक्रहंसभेदोऽस्यः खन्ने करहरमाहुः । उक्तञ्च “कारखवः काक-
वक्त्रो दीर्घाक्षिः कृष्णवर्णभाक्” इति ।

प्रसहानाह . . . कङ्कः दीर्घचक्षुर्महापाशः । उक्तं च “कङ्कः स्यात् कङ्क-
मन्त्राख्यो बाणपचाहपक्षकः । लोहपृष्ठो दीर्घपादः पद्याधः पाशुवर्णभाक् ।”
इति ।

The sources from which Dalvana derives detailed information about these varied forms of animal life are now unavailable, but these extracts abundantly testify to the minute Nature study of the Hindus.

The Hindus had of course no idea of an anatomical classification of birds.

The ancient writer Lādyāyana had a much better idea of zoological description in reference to the *Kitas* (insects and reptiles, *vide infra*).

II.—*Jarāyujas* (viviparous, *lit.* placentalia) in the usual wider sense, comprising—

(a) *Charmapakṣa pākṣis*, leather-winged animals, which are Deciduata (*Potaja*). Charaka calls them *Mrigapakṣiṇa* (mammal birds), and distinguishes them from the birds of prey proper, in his enumeration of the *Prasahas* (*Sutrasthāna*, Chap. XXVII.). The Bats mentioned are :—

- (1) *Valguli* (flying-fox).
- (2) The *Pakṣi Virāla* (flying-cat, micro-Chiroptera).
- (3) The *Bharanda* (a species of micro-Chiroptera, the horse-shoe bat?).
- (4) The *Jalukā* (*lit.* aquatic or amphibious, or more probably leech, bat, blood-sucking or vampire bat?). These are placed among carnivorous animals.

(b) The *Vileśaya Jarāyujas*, mammals that live in holes or burrows, including various species of Rodents and Insectivora, which are named.

Eighteen different varieties of mice are specified (Suśruta, *Kalpasthāna*, Chap. VI.).

- (c) *Parṇamrigas*, arboreal mammals, comprising some Rodents (squirrels, etc.), a wild-cat, the sloths, and the apes (वानर).

- (d) Non-carnivorous quadrupeds (अक्रव्यादाः):—

(1) *Jāṅghālas* (lit. strong-legged quadrupeds, frequenting hilly and jungly tracts), comprising various species of deer (non-carnivorous wild animals, अक्रव्याद).

(2) *Kulechara*, mammals grazing on the banks of rivers, and frequenting marshy places, comprising the elephant, the rhinoceros, the gāveya (*Bos gāveus*), the buffalo, the hog, and also several species of deer (which live in well-watered lands). These are also non-carnivorous (अक्रव्याद).

(3) *Grāmyas* (lit. living in or near villages), non-carnivorous, domesticated quadrupeds, some with undivided hoof, others with cloven hoof, comprising the horse, the mule, the ass, the camel, the cow, the goat, the sheep, etc. These are all non-carnivorous. The dog and the cat are not mentioned in the list.

- (e) Carnivorous quadrupeds, *Guhāśaya* (living in natural caves or hollows, carnivorous *Kravyāda*), comprising the lion, the tiger, the wolf (of the dog class), the hyena, the bear, the panther, the cat, the jackal, etc. The Carnivora were termed

Vyâlas or *Kravyâdas*, and the *Herbivora Pasus* (in a wider sense).

(f) Man.

The term *Jarâyuja*, in a wider sense, came to mean "viviparous," and included the above orders of animals. But the Jainas used the term *Jarâyuja* in a narrower sense to mean only those viviparous animals which come out at birth with the placenta (a-deciduata). The Deciduata (including the Proboscidea, the Rodentia, the Insectivora, the Chiroptera, etc.) were termed *Potaja*, *lit.* viviparous animals born without placenta. Man, the apes, and the Carnivora are, however, reckoned with the *Jarâyuja* (viviparous, born with placenta). Perhaps the afterbirth was observed in these cases, whereas the *Potajas* (Deciduata) may have been erroneously conceived to throw off no placenta (गर्भे जन्म, *supra*).

Lâdyâyana appears to have made a special study of the classification of *Kîtas* (Insects and Reptiles), and is quoted by Dalvana as a great authority on the subject.

The various forms (रूप) of *Kîtas* are to be distinguished from one another by peculiarities in the following marks :—

(1) Dottings or markings, (2) wings, (3) pedal appendages, (4) mouth, with antennæ or nippers (मुलमन्दश—Dalvana), (5) claws, (6) sharp, pointed hairs or filaments, (7) stings in the tail, (8) hymenopterous character (संक्षिप्तैः पञ्चरोमभिः), (9) humming or other noise, (10) size, (11) structure of the body, (12) sexual organs (this is how I interpret *linga* here), and (13) poison and its action on bodies.

Cf. कटुभिः विन्दुलेखाभिः पद्मैः पादैः मुखैः नसैः
 शूकैः कण्टकलांगलैः संधिष्टैः पद्मरोमभिः ।
 स्तनैः प्रमाणैः संस्थानैर्लिङ्गैश्चापि शरीरगैः
 विषयीक्यैश्च कौटानां रूपज्ञानं विभाव्यते ॥

(Quoted from Lāḍyāyana by Dalvana, *Kalpasthāna*,
 Chap. VIII.)

CHAPTER VI.

HINDU PHYSIOLOGY AND BIOLOGY.

SECTION 1.

METABOLISM.

The food that we eat contains five classes of organic compounds. From their radicles or predominant elements, the substances are named Earth-compounds, Ap-compounds, Tejas-compounds, Vāyu-compounds, and Âkāśa-compounds. The Earth-compounds supply the hard, formed matter of the body, the Tejas-compounds give the animal heat (or the metabolic heat), the Vāyu-compounds are the sources of the motor-force in the organism, the Ap-compounds furnish the watery parts of the organic fluids, and the Âkāśa-compounds contribute to the finer etheric essence which is the vehicle of the conscious life

Roughly speaking, the Earth-compounds answer to the nitrogen compounds in the food, the Tejas-compounds to the hydro-carbons (heating-producing), and the Vāyu-compounds to the carbo-hydrates (dynamic). The Ap-compounds are the watery parts of food and drink. The flesh, for example, is a tissue composed principally of the Earth-compounds; the fat, of the Earth- and Ap-compounds; the bones, of Earth-, Vāyu-, and Tejas-compounds. Different operations of the metabolic

heat (perhaps different digestive fluids are also meant) are required to digest the different substances in the food.

The course of metabolism is described as follows. The entire alimentary canal is called the *Mahāsrotas* (the great channel).

The food goes down the gullet by the action of the bio-motor force, the *Prāṇa Vāyu*.

In the stomach (*आमाशय*) the food becomes mixed up, first with a gelatinous mucus (*केलीभूत कषे*) which has a saccharine taste, and then gets acidulated by the further chemical action of a digestive juice (*विदाहादमती गतः*, evidently the gastric juice is meant). Then the bio-motor force, the *Samāna Vāyu*, begins to act, and drives down the chyme, by means of the *Grahāṇi Nādi*, to the *Pittāśaya* (duodenum, *lit.* bile-receptacle), and thence to the small intestines (the *आमपक्वाशय*). In these, the bile (or rather the digestive substance in the bile, as opposed to the colouring element) acts on the chyme and converts the latter into chyle (*रस*), which has at first a *katu* taste (pungency). This chyle contains in a decomposed and metamorphosed condition all the organic compounds, viz. tissue-producing Earth-compounds, water-parts or Ap-compounds, heat-producing Tejas-compounds, force-producing Vāyu-compounds, and lastly, finer etheric constituents which serve as the vehicle of consciousness. The essence of chyle (*सूक्ष्मभाग*) from the small intestines is driven by the bio-motor force, the *Prāṇa Vāyu*, along a *Dhamanī* trunk (*cf.* the thoracic duct), first to the heart (which is a great receptacle of chyle), and thence to the liver (and the spleen); and in the liver the colouring substance in

the bile acts on the essence of chyle, especially on the Tejas-substance therein, and imparts to it a red pigment, transforming it into blood; but the grosser part of chyle (सूक्ष्मभाग) proceeds along the Dhamanis, being driven by the bio-motor force, the *Vyāna Vāyu*, all over the body.

When the blood has been formed, the essence of chyle in the blood, acted on by *Vāyu* (bio-motor force) and *Māmsāgni* (the flesh-forming metabolic heat), forms the flesh-tissue, the Earth-compound of the food-substance especially contributing to this tissue. Of the flesh-tissue thus formed, the grosser part goes to feed or replenish the flesh-tissue all over the body. The finer essence of flesh in the blood in the chyle, acted on again by *Vāyu* (bio-motor current) and the fat-forming metabolic heat (मेदोऽग्नि) in the menstruum of lymph (कफे समाश्रित्य), receives viscosity and whiteness, and produces the fatty tissue, the Earth-compounds and Ap-compounds of the food specially contributing to the product. This fat in the chyle (or blood), or rather the grosser part of it, replenishes the fatty tissue of the body, but the finer essence of fat in the flesh in the blood in the chyle, acted on by *Vāyu* (bio-motor current) and the marrow-forming metabolic heat, in the menstruum of lymph (श्लेष्मणावृतं), becomes hard (crystalline) and forms bone, the Earth-, *Vāyu*-, and Tejas-compounds contributing principally to the product. The essence of the fat fills the hollow channels of the bones, and acted on again by bio-motor *Vāyu* and metabolic heat, becomes transformed into marrow. The marrow is similarly transformed into the semen, which is con-

veyed down by means of a pair of *Dhamanīs* or ducts (दे शुकवहे), lodged in its receptacles (शुक्रपरा—वृषसौ), and discharged by means of another pair of ducts (देविसगाच). The semen, or rather all the elements in their finer essence, give off *ojas*, which returns to the heart, the receptacle of chyle and blood, and again floods the body and sustains the tissues, thus completing the wheel or self-returning circle of metabolism (परिवृत्तिस्तु चक्रवत्, cf. Charaka and Vāgbhata).

It is to be noted that, throughout, the fluid in the chyle or blood acts as the menstruum, though occasionally the lymph, which is itself a derivative from the chyle, is added, as in the case of the fatty tissue and the bones; and that each preceding element or constituent of the body (धातु—शरीरारम्भक धातु) takes up the proper organic compounds from the food chyle to form the next element or tissue. Throughout, also, the chemical changes are due to the metabolic heat which breaks up the compounds and recombines, but the operations, and even the vehicles perhaps, of this heat are different. For example, these heat-corpuscles in the biliary ducts produce the bile, but the bile-secretion is supposed to contain two distinct substances: (1) a digestive fluid in the duodenum (पित्ताशय), which acts on the chyme to produce the chyle (अन्नस्य पक्व पाचकाख्यं पित्तं); and (2) a colouring bile-substance in the liver, which adds a red pigment to the chyle and transforms it into blood (रक्तकाख्यं पित्तं). Besides, there are three other biles, of which the aqueous humour in the eye is supposed to be one (आलोककं पित्तं), helping in the formation of visual images (रूपग्राहकं). This is the view of Dhanvantari and

his school, but Âtreya holds there is no evidence that the bile really performs the first (digestive) function, for this can be accounted for by the animal heat arising from the working of the whole bodily machine.

There are three different hypotheses regarding the course of metabolism and the successive transformations of the chyle (द्वीरदधिनाय—केदारीकुल्यानाय—खलेकपोतनायेति त्रिधा पातुषोपगच्छन्—Chakrapâni, Bhānumati, Sūtrasthāna, XIV., 10; also his commentary on Charaka, Sūtrasthāna, XXVIII.), but my account is based on the second hypothesis, which has the preference of Chakrapâni (स्वरसः). It may be added as a curiosity that each element of the body (पातु) under the metabolic heat is supposed to give off a finer essence (मुख्यभाग), which serves as the material of the next succeeding element, and a dross (मल), which forms some of the excreta in the body (including the nails, the hair, etc.), besides retaining its own substance (the gross or main part), which is driven along by the *Vāyus* (bio-motor or vital currents), or by the *Śrotas*, to its destination in the body.

Some idea of *circulation* appears to have been entertained, for the heart which receives, and then sends down the chyle through the *Dhamanīs*, gets it back transformed into blood, and the *ojas* also proceeds from the heart and returns to it along with the chyle and the blood.

(Cf. Vāgbhata, ज्ञाः दृक्स्थाः शिराः रसालकं चोत्रः अभिवहन्त्यः) । पचभूतात्मके देहे आहारः पाचभीतिवः । विपक्वः पचधा सम्यग् गच्छान् स्थानमिषड्वेपेत् ।—Suśruta, Sūtrasthāna, Ch. XLVI.; cf. also विपक्वपचनजाताभ्यां वृद्धिमाप्नोति नारुतः । आग्नेयमेव यद्द्रव्यं तेन पिन्नमुदीर्यते ।—*Ibid.*, Ch. XLI. भीमाग्नेयवायव्याः पचोक्ताश्चः सनाभस्ताः । पचाहा-

रगुणान् स्थान् स्थान् पार्थिवादीन् पचन्त्यनु । यथार्सं ते च पुष्कानि पक्का भूतगुणान् पृषक् । पार्थिवाः पार्थिवानेव शेषाः शेषाश्च देहगान् । अतिरिक्ता गुणा रक्ते बह्वैर्भासे तु पार्थिवाः । मदस्यर्पा भुवश्चास्मिन् पृथिव्यनिलतेजसा ।—Charaka quoted by Dalvana. चादीं बह्वरसन्यत्रं सपुरोभूतमोरयेत, फेणोभूतं कर्कं यार्तं पिदाहादृष्टां गतः । वायुना समानास्थेन ग्रहणीमभिनीयते । यद्यो पित्तपरा नाम या कला परिकीर्तिता । आमपक्वाशयानःस्या ग्रहणी साभिधीयते । अग्न्यधिष्ठानमवस्य ग्रहणाद् ग्रहणी मता । भुक्तमामाशये रुद्धा सा विषाण्य नपापः । चलत्पलला त्वन्नमाममेव विमुञ्चति । . . . अस्य पक्व पित्तनु पाचकास्त्वं पुरेरितम् । दोषधातुमलादीनामुपमेतात्रेयशासनम् । . . . तेजोरसानां सर्वेषामम्बुजानां यदुच्यते, पित्रोष्मणा सरागेण रसो रक्तमृच्छति । वाय्वाग्निनतेजसा युक्तं रक्तं मांसमृच्छति । श्लेष्माश्च समाश्रित्य मांसं वाय्वाग्नि-संपुतम्, स्थिरतां प्राप्य जीवत्यं च मेदो देहेऽभिजायते । पृथिव्यग्न्यानिलादीनां सकृधातः श्लेष्मणापुनः, खरत्वं प्रकरोत्यस्य जायतेऽस्य ततो नृणाम् । करोति तत्र लीधिर्यमस्थनी मध्ये समोरणः । मेदसा तानि पूर्यन्ते खेहो मज्जा ततः स्मृतः । तस्मान्मज्जश्च यः खेहः शुक्रं संजायते ततः ।—Charaka-Dridhavalā Samhitā quoted by Aruṇa in his commentary on Vāgbhata.)

यथा केदारनिषर्कं कुत्स्याजलं प्रत्यासवां केदारोमाप्रावयति । तथा रस एव प्रथमं रक्तं प्रावयति । तत्र रक्तस्यानसम्बन्धात् रक्तसादृश्यं रक्तव्यपेदशं च अनु-भवति । रक्तं च रक्तमानेन लोकेनांशेन चर्षं पोषयति । ततो रक्तमाप्राप्य मांसमाप्रावयति, एवमुन्नरोन्नरधातून् रसएव प्रावयति । (Chakradatta, Bhānumati). This passage shows that the "venous blood" was conceived to be chyle-essence mixed with blood, and that the circulation of the chyle, so far as it was held to contribute its quota to the constituent elements and tissues of the body, was really supposed to be identical with the circulation of the blood (ततो रक्तमाप्राप्य मांसमाप्रावयति). This will be abundantly clear from the following account of the course of the chyle and the blood :—

ततः सारभूतस्याहाररसस्य द्वौ भागौ भवतः । स्थूलः सूक्ष्मश्च . . . ततः

सूक्ष्मोभागः प्राणवायुनाप्रेरितो धमनीमार्गेण शरीरारम्भकस्य रक्तस्य स्थानं यकृत-प्रोद्धार्य गत्वा तेन सह मिलितोभयति । ततः प्राक्तनरक्तपातौ एव तिष्ठति । . . . ततः सारभूतस्य जाहाररसस्य द्वौ भागौ भवतः । स्थूलः सूक्ष्मश्च । स्थूलो भागो रज्ज्वास्थ्येन पिप्पलेन रक्तोक्तः शरीरारम्भकं रक्तं पोषयन् प्यान-वायुना प्रेरितो धमनीभिः सञ्चरन् सकलशरीरगतानि रुधिराणि पुष्पाति । ततः सूक्ष्मोभागः प्यानवायुनाप्रेरितो धमनीभिः शिराभिश्च शरीरारम्भकाणि मौसानि याति । *et seq.*

This finer essence of chyle which nourishes the flesh is also carried in the blood, on the irrigation channel hypothesis (ज्वेदारी-कुल्यान्याय).

SECTION 2.

THE CIRCULATORY SYSTEM.

The standing puzzle of Hindu anatomy and physiology is the classification of the *Śīrās*, *Dhamanīs*, and *Śrotas*, the channels, passages, and ducts in the body including the arteries, veins, nerves, lymphatic vessels, etc. The difficulty was felt by the ancient observers themselves. Some were of opinion that the *Dhamanīs* and *Śrotas* are only modifications of the *Śīrās*, and that the division is artificial. Suśruta, however, contends that they are distinct, because they can be traced to different roots and have different functions; they are apt to be confounded only because they are minute, juxtaposed, and similar in function (Suśruta, *Śārīrasthāna*, Chapter IX.). Charaka also accepts the established division, but points out that the numbers as estimated are conjectural (चनिर्द्देश्यमतःपरं तत्त्वमेव, *Śārīrasthāna*, Chapter VII.).

The *Śīrās*, *Dhamanīs*, and *Śrotas* form networks

(बालानि) of cords, fibres, passages, which in the foetus take their rise from the umbilical cord, and proceed upwards to the heart and head, downwards to the kidneys and rectum, and outwards to the trunk and limbs. These three classes comprise all the vehicles or conductors of the fluids, secretions, and currents in the bodily system.

The *Śrotas* (currents). This is a peculiarity of Hindu physiology. The chyle, the blood, the *Vāyu*, the metabolic fluid (सिक्ता), the lymph, the fat, the marrow, in every part of the body, is supposed to be connected by means of subtle currents (*Śrotas*) with the same kind of fluid (or tissue) in every other part. Without supposing such special connections, many pathological phenomena cannot be explained.

The *Śīrās* are divided into four groups: (1) the arteries for conducting the blood, (2) the lymphatics for conducting the lymph, (3) a class of bile-ducts, and (4) a class of ducts for the *Vāyus*, the currents which work the automatic and reflex machinery of the living organism. In each group there are 10 trunk *Śīrās*, which sub-divide into 175 cords, and further ramify minutely all over the body, even as a network of minute fibrils covers the leaf of a tree.

The functions of the different groups of *Śīrās* are to conduct or transmit the (arterial) blood, the lymph, the bile, and the (vital) *Vāyu* currents respectively to the different parts of the body. The *Śīrās* are compared to the conduits of the flowing water in a pleasure-house (a garden), or the channels of irrigation that flood a field. The conduction (or transmission) of the fluids and

currents is effected by an alternate dilation and contraction of the vessels, the systolic movement differing according to the nature of the fluid propelled :

सप्त शिराशतानि भवन्ति याभिरिदं शरीरमाराम इव जलहारिणीभिः
केदारद्वयं च कुल्याभिरुपसिञ्चते अनुगृह्यते च चाकुञ्चनप्रसारणादिभिर्विशेषैः ।
दुग्धपक्षसेवनोनामिव तासां प्रतानाः । तासां नाभिर्गुह्यं ततश्च प्रसरत्यूर्ध्वं स्रव-
न्तिर्ध्वं च । तासां मूलशिराश्चत्वारिंशत् । तासां वातवाहिन्यो दश पित्तवा-
हिन्यो दश कफवाहिन्यो दश दश रक्तवाहिन्यः—*Suśruta, Śārīrasthāna*,
Chap. VII.

The *Dhamanīs* in the foetus take their rise from the umbilical cord, thus bringing nourishment from the mother. They are divided into three groups: (a) ten trunks or cords going up to the heart, and thence to the head, (b) ten going down to the intestines, kidneys, and rectum, and (c) four branching obliquely or sidewise, and ramifying over the whole body. In a general way, it may be stated that the *Dhamanīs* comprise (1) the veins, (2) the nerves (including the sympathetic system), (3) the chyle-ducts (including the thoracic duct?) as distinguished from the other lymphatics, which are mostly classed as *Śirās*, (4) the ducts for urine, sweat, and other secretions, and (5) lastly, certain classes of bile-ducts and conductors of *Vāyu* currents, possibly those connected with the venous system and the chyle-ducts.

The first group of *Dhamanīs*:—Special features: Each of the ten ascending *Dhamanīs*, on reaching the heart, trifurcates, and proceeds to the head. Of these fibres, one pair is engaged in conducting each of the four sensory currents (those of sound, colour, taste, and smell) from the sense-organs, as *Charaka* and *Suśruta*

must have supposed, to the heart, which is for them the seat of consciousness (हृदयं विज्ञेयं चेतनास्थानम्, *Suśruta, Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. IV. ; हृदयं चेतनाधिष्ठानमेकम्, *Charaka, Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. VIII.). Other *Dhamanīs*, also in pairs, are engaged in conducting automatic (or voluntary) motor currents (e.g. the currents concerned in respiration, yawning, sleeping and waking), or the secretions of the lachrymal and mammary glands.

The second group of *Dhamanīs* :—Special functions : The descending *Dhamanīs* go down to the intestines, kidneys, bladder, and rectum, and their special function is to convey, in pairs as before, urine and other secretions and excreta. They also convey the chyle from the small intestines to the ascending as well as the ramifying *Dhamanīs*. In addition, some of them convey sweat to the ramifying *Dhamanīs*.

The third group :—Special functions : The remaining four *Dhamanīs* ramify obliquely over the body into millions of fibres and fibrillæ, which terminate in the pores of the skin. From all parts of the periphery they conduct the sensory currents of touch to the central organ of the heart (including the internal organic sensations). Being connected with the pores of the skin, they conduct sweat outwards, and the influences of baths, embrocations, and fomentations inwards.

Other *Dhamanīs* serving as chyle-ducts and as (venous) blood-vessels.—Besides the special functions performed by the three groups, there are two characteristic functions common to certain classes of *Dhamanīs* which are found in all the three groups, viz. the conduc-

tion of chyle and of (venous) blood, *i.e.* of impure blood before it gets its red pigment from the liver. It may also be added that the three principal elements of the body—*Vāyu* (vital current), *Pitta* (bile, or rather the fluid animal heat which produces metabolism, पाक, and flows to all the parts of the body by means of connective passages), and *Kapha* (lymph)—make use of the *Dhamanīs* as well as the *Sirās* and *Śrotas*, *i.e.* of all manner of conductors in the organism (*cf.* Charaka, वातपित्तश्लेष्मणा पुनः सर्वशरीरचराणां सर्वाणि श्रोतांसि जयनभूतानि—*Vimānasthāna*, Chapter V.).

The functions of the *Sirās* may therefore be stated as follows:—

(1) The conduction of blood from the liver and spleen, red blood (what may be called the arterial blood of this system of physiology), to the heart, head, trunk, limbs, etc.

(2) Common functions of all connective passages, *viz.* the conduction of *Vāyu* (vital current), *Pitta* (metabolic fluid), and *Kapha* (lymph).

The different classes of *Dhamanīs*, with their functions, are:—

(1) The nerves: (*a*) eight sensory (central) nerves for the four special senses other than touch; (*b*) twelve motor nerves partly for voluntary and partly for automatic movements; and (*c*) the nerves of touch and organic sensation, including the sympathetic nerves.

(2) and (3) The chyle-ducts and the conductors of (venous) blood before it is transformed into blood in the liver (and the spleen).

(4) The classes of *Dhamanīs*, which, in common

with the *Śirās* and *Śrotas*, conduct *Vāyu*, *Pitta*, and *Kapha*, the prime movers of the organic life.

THE VASCULAR SYSTEM.

The anatomical arrangement of the *Śirās* and *Dhamanīs* in Charaka and Suśruta is so obscure that only a rough outline of its general features can be attempted. In fact, Charaka contents himself with giving the number of *Śirā* cords as 700, and of *Dhamanī* cords as 200. He also estimates the ramifications as numbering 3,056,900.

The carriage of the blood and the lymph is accomplished by two sets of vessels, *Śirās* and *Dhamanīs*, the first standing for "arteries" (with capillaries) and lymphatics (other than chyle-ducts), and the second for "veins" and chyle-ducts (as well as certain passages for sweat, etc.).

The navel in the foetus is taken to be the source and origin of the entire vascular system, whether for the blood or the lymph. Vāgbhata takes the heart to be the origin of the *Śirās*.

From this central alimentary tract two sets of vessels (*Śirās* and *Dhamanīs*—*Rasavāhinyah*) issue for the flow of the chyle and other lymph, and two sets (*Śirās* and *Dhamanīs*, "arteries" and "veins"—*Raktavāhinyah*) for the flow of the blood.

The Lymph (and Chyle): Distribution.—The chyle is conducted by the chyle-bearing *Dhamanīs* (*Rasavāhinyah*), and the lymph (other than chyle) by the lymph-bearing *Śirās* and *Dhamanīs* (*Kaphavāhinyah*).

The lymph-bearing *Śirās* comprise 10 branches at the origin, and ramify into 175—viz., 25 in each leg, 25 in each arm, 8 in the pelvic cavity, coccyx, penis, etc., 2 in each side, 6 in the back, 6 in the abdomen, 10 in the breast, 14 in the neck, 2 in the ears, 9 in the tongue, 6 in the nose, and 10 in the eyes.

The chyle is carried by another system of vessels (*Rasavāhinyah Dhamanyah*). The chyle-ducts issue from the *Navī* (possibly the receptaculum chyli in this case). A *Dhamanī* trunk descends to the small intestine, and, taking up the chyle, proceeds upwards towards the heart (thoracic duct?). Two chyle-ducts as well as two lymph-ducts (*Dhamanīs—Rasavāhinyah* and *Kaphavāhinyah*) proceed from the heart, and ramify over the head and trunk. Similarly two chyle-ducts and two lymph-ducts proceed from the intestinal tract and ramify over the pelvic region. Four obliquely branching *Dhamanīs* (bearing chyle, sweat, and internal secretions) also spread from the central tract, and ramify in numberless minute channels over the limbs and the body.

The Blood-vascular System.—There are two classes of blood conductors: (1) *Śirās*, which break up into capillaries (*Pratān*) and distribute "pure" blood from the liver (and spleen) to the heart, and from the heart to the rest of the body (*asrigrahāscha rohinyah śirāh nātyuṣṇasātālāh*,—*Suśruta*, *Sarīrasthāna*, Chap. VII.; cf. *Vāgbhata*: *daśa mūlaśirāh hrīststhāh*, Chap. III., *Sarīrasthāna*), and (2) *Dhamanīs* (*Raktavāhinyah*), which proceed, two from the intestinal tract (portal

vein and inferior vena cava), and two from the heart (superior vena cava and pulmonary artery?).

The "venous" blood (chyle-mixed blood) proceeds from the alimentary tract (gastric and intestinal vessels), along a *Dhamanî* trunk (portal vein?) to the liver (and spleen), where the chyle gets a red pigment and is turned into (pure) blood. From the liver and spleen, *Śirâs* ("arteries") proceed to the heart. The liver (and spleen, a minor blood-vascular gland) and the heart are the centres of origin of the *Śirâs* ("arteries"), and distribute pure blood by their means over the entire body.

Arrangement of the blood-bearing *Śirâs* and *Dhamanîs*. — Two blood-bearing *Dhamanî* trunks ("veins") proceed from the heart (superior vena cava and pulmonary artery?), and two proceed from different regions of the alimentary tract (portal vein and inferior vena cava?). Ten *Śirâs* bearing pure blood proceed from the alimentary tract to the liver and spleen, which are joined on to the heart by means of both *Śirâs* and *Dhamanîs*. The ten *Śirâs* are subdivided into 175 branches, which are distributed over the body in the same way as the lymph-bearing *Śirâs* (*vide supra*).

It is clear that Charaka and Suśruta had no idea of the part played by the lungs in the purification of the blood. The liver converts the "venous" blood in this system into true ("arterial") blood, and along with the spleen serves as a basis of discrimination between a *Śirâ* and a *Dhamanî*, thus illustrating Suśruta's statement that the distinction between these two kinds

of blood-vessels must be accepted as real, inasmuch as they have different sources and different functions.

तासानु नाभिप्रभवानो धमनीनामूर्ध्वेगा दश दश चाधोगामिन्यश्नत-
सर्त्तियेगाः ऊर्ध्वेगास्तु हृदयमभिप्रपन्ना स्त्रिधा जायन्ते । अधोगमास्तु पित्राश्रय-
मभिप्रतिपन्नास्तत्रस्थमेवात्रपानरसं विपश्ने चोष्ण्याद् विरेचयन्त्यः क्षमिवहन्त्यः
शरीरं तर्पयन्ति चोर्ध्वेगतानां त्रियेगगतानां रसस्थाननभिपूरयन्ति (Sūsruta,
Śārīrasthāna, Chap. IX.). तत्र पाचनीतिकस्य आहारस्य सम्यक्
परिणतस्य यस्तेजोभूतः सारः परमसूक्ष्मः स रस इष्यते । तस्य च हृदये स्थानम् ।
स हृदयाच्चतुर्विंशतीः धमनीरनुप्रविश्य ऊर्ध्वेगा दश दश चाधोगामिन्यश्नत-
सर्त्तियेगाः कृत्स्नं शरीरं अहरहस्तर्पयन्ति । तस्य शरीरमनुधापतोऽमुमानाद्
गतिरूपलक्षणपित्त्या । स सत्त्वाप्पोरसः यकृतप्रोहानीं प्राप्य रागमुपैति । (Ibid.,
Chap. IV.). रजितास्तेजसास्त्वापः शरीरस्थेन देहिनां रक्तमित्यभिधीयते ।
(Ibid., Sutrasthāna, Chap. XIV.). सप्तशिराशतानि भवन्ति ।
याभिरिदं शरीरम् आराम इव जलहारिणीभिः केदार इव कुत्साभिरुपच्छिद्यते
आकुचनप्रसारणादिभिर्विशेषैः । नाम्नां स्रष्टा निचङ्कालाः प्रतन्वन्ति समन्ततः ।
तासां मूलशिराः चत्वारिंशत्तासां वातवाहिन्यो दश पित्तवाहिन्यो दश कफवा-
हिन्यो दश दश च रक्तवाहिन्यः । तासानु वातवाहिनीनां वात स्थानगतानां
पञ्चसप्ततिशतं भवति । रक्तवाहिन्यश्च यकृतपोहोरेष । तत्र वातवाहिन्यः शिराः
एकस्मिन् सकृन्नि पञ्चविंशतिः । एतेन इतरसकृन्निवाहू च व्याख्याती । विशेषतस्तु
कोष्ठे पृष्ठे चोदरे वक्षसि जजुषः ऊर्ध्वे । एवं रक्तवहाः कफवहाश्च । धातूनां पूरयं
यस्यै स्पृशेज्ज्ञानमसंशयम् । स्त्र्याः शिराः सच्चरद्रुक् कुप्यौञ्जानान् गुणानपि
(Śārīrasthāna, Chap. VIII.). द्वितीया (कला) रक्तधरा नाम ।
तस्यां शोषितं विशेषतस्तु शिरामु यकृतं प्रोहोष भवति (Ibid., Chap. IV.).
तृतीया (कला) पित्तधरा नाम । चतुर्विधमन्नपानमुपयुक्तमाशयात् प्रच्युतं पक्वाश-
योपस्थितं धारयति । सोतस्तद् विद्येयं शिराधमनीवर्चिन्तं । . . . तानि (स्रोतोसि)
प्राणाओदकरसरक्तनासमेदोमूत्रपुरीषशुक्रार्तवपहानि । तत्र प्राणवहे डे । तयोर्मूलं
हृदये रसवाहिन्यश्च धमन्यः । उदकवहे डे । तयोर्मूलं तालु ज्ञोम (Kloma,
gall-bladder) च । तत्र विडस्य पिपासा । अन्नवहे डे । तयोर्मूलं आमाशयः
अन्नवाहिन्यश्च धमन्यः । रसवहे डे । तयोर्मूलं हृदये रसवाहिन्यश्च धमन्यः ।
रक्तवहे डे । तयोर्मूलं यकृतप्रोहानीं रक्तवाहिन्यश्च धमन्यः । मांसवहे डे ।
तयोर्मूलं आमुलश्च रक्तवाहिन्यश्च धमन्यः ।

SECTION 3.

THE NERVOUS SYSTEM IN CHARAKA.

The Nerves.—*Dhamanîs* as nerves: The anatomy of the nervous system in Charaka and Suśruta can be more clearly and confidently restored. The *Dhamanîs* that ascend from the heart divide into thirty cords, of which twenty, *i.e.* ten pairs, are cranial nerves, and the other ten, or five pairs, are engaged in conveying vital currents, metabolic fluid, lymph, blood, and chyle.

The cranial nerves are: (1) four pairs of sensory nerves carrying sensory impulses from the sense-organs to the heart, *viz.* the optic, auditory, olfactory, and gustatory nerves, and (2) six pairs of motor (or mixed nerves), *e.g.* three pairs of motor nerves for the eye (*Motores oculorum*, *Pathetic* and *Abducentes*) working the *Levator Palpebræ* and other muscles of the orbit; one pair of motor nerves for articulation (the *Hypoglossal*); one pair of motor nerves for the larynx (the *Pneumo-gastric*), and another pair connected with *mammæ* and (in the case of the male) the seminal duct. It is further stated that other motor or sensori-motor impulses are carried by some of these cranial nerves, *viz.* those which produce sighs and sobs, yawning, laughter, and hunger. Evidently some of the functions of the *pneumogastric* and the spinal accessory nerves are intended, as also of the *phrenic* and other nerves of the cervical plexus.

Of the thirty descending *Dhamanîs*, ten (or five pairs) are conductors of blood, chyle, vital current,

metabolic fluid, and lymph, and the remaining twenty are spinal nerves (specially the nerves of the sacro-coccygeal and sacral plexuses; if not also of the lumbar plexus). The obliquely branching *Dhamanīs*, so far as they are nerves, comprise the brachial and the lumbar plexus, and divide and sub-divide hundred-fold, thousand-fold, till they ramify into fibrillae round the pores of the skin. They carry to the heart cutaneous sensations, external as well as internal. A fibril (मृक्षनाडी) is said to be as minute as the thousandth part of a hair (लोमः सहस्रभागेन तुल्यसु प्रचरत्यलुः—*Panchadashī*).

ऊर्ध्वगाः शब्दरूपरसगन्धप्रश्वासोच्चवासविभृम्भितद्युद्धसितकषितरुदितादौन्-
विशेषान् अभिवहन्त्यः शरीरं धारयन्ति । तास्तु हृदयमभिप्रतिपन्नास्त्रिधा नापन्ते
तास्त्रिंशत् । तासान् वातपित्तकफशोणितरसान् डे डे षट्शता दश । शब्द-
रूपरसगन्धान् अष्टाभिर्गृह्णीते । ज्ञाभ्यां भाषते । ज्ञाभ्यां घोषं करोति । ज्ञाभ्यां
स्पर्शति । ज्ञाभ्यां प्रतिबुध्यते । डे च अश्रुवाहिनी । डे स्नानसंश्रिते । ते एव
शुक्लं नरस्य स्तनाभ्यां अभिवहतः ।

त्रिर्य्यङ्गानान्तु चतसृणां धमनीनां एकैका शतधा सहस्रधा ओष्ठरोष्ठरं
विभज्यन्ते तास्त्वसंख्येयाः ।

ताभिरिदं शरीरं गवाक्षितं तासां मुखानि रोमकूपप्रतिबद्धानि । यैः
स्नेहमभिवहन्ति रसश्चापि सन्तपेयन्ति अन्नवैहिष्ठ । तैरेव चाभ्यङ्गपरिषेकावगा-
हालेपनचोय्यौषि अन्नःशरीरोरमभिप्रतिपद्यन्ते । त्वचि विपद्धानि तैरेव स्पर्शमुख-
ममुखं वा गृह्णाति । तास्तु एताद्यतस्रोधमन्यः सर्वाङ्गताः सविभागा व्याख्याताः ।
(*Suśruta, Śārīrasthāna, Chap. IX.*)

SECTION 4.

THE NERVOUS SYSTEM AFTER THE TANTRAS— PSYCHO-PHYSIOLOGY.

In Charaka and Suśruta (as in Aristotle) the heart is the central organ and seat of consciousness; but in

the Tantric writings (as in Galen) the seat of consciousness is transferred to the brain or rather the cerebro-spinal system. The soul (the *Jiva*) has its special seat within the *Brahmarandhra* above the foramen of Monro and the middle commissure, but traverses the whole cerebro-spinal axis, up and down, along the *Suṣumna* (the central passage of the spinal cord). The *Brahma-danda* (vertebral column) contains the *Suṣumna*, the *Brahma Nāḍī*, and the *Manovahā Nāḍī*. The cerebro-spinal axis with the connected sympathetic system contains a number of ganglionic centres and plexuses (*Chakras*, *Padmas*) from which nerves (*Nāḍīs*, *Śīrās*, and *Dhamanīs*)¹ radiate over the head, trunk, and limbs.

SECTION 5.

GANGLIONIC CENTRES AND PLEXUSES (SYMPATHETIC-SPINAL SYSTEM).

Beginning with the lower extremity, the centres and plexuses of the connected spinal and sympathetic systems may be described as follows:—

(1) The *Adhāra Chakra*, the sacro-coccygeal plexus, with four branches, eleven *angulis* (about nine inches) below the solar plexus (*Kanda*, *Brahmagranthī*); the source of a massive pleasurable æsthesia, voluminous organic sensations of repose. An inch and a half above

¹ The writers of the Yoga and Tantra schools use the term *Nāḍī*, by preference, for nerves. They also mean cranial nerves when they speak of *Śīrās*, never using the latter term for arteries, as in the older medical literature.

it, and the same distance below the *membrum virile* (*Mehana*), is a minor centre called the *Agni-sikhâ*.

(2) The *Svâdhisthâna Chakra*, the sacral plexus with six branches (*पञ्चाङ्गि, दलानि*—leaves), concerned in the excitation of sexual feelings with the accompaniments of lassitude, stupor, cruelty, suspicion, contempt.

(3) The *Nâvikanda* (corresponding to the solar plexus, *Bhânubhavanam*), which forms the great junction of the right and left sympathetic chains (*Pingalâ* and *Idâ*) with the cerebro-spinal axis.

Connected with this is the *Manipuraka*, the lumbar plexus with connected sympathetic nerves, the ten branches of which are concerned in the production of sleep and thirst, and the expressions of passions like jealousy, shame, fear, stupefaction.

(4) The *Anâhata Chakra*, the cardiac plexus of the sympathetic chain, with twelve branches, connected with the heart, the seat of the egoistic sentiments, hope, anxiety, doubt, remorse, conceit, egoism, etc.

(5) The *Bhûratisthâna*, the junction of the spinal cord with the medulla oblongata, which, by means of nerves like the pneumo-gastric, etc., regulates the larynx and other organs of articulation. This also comprises the laryngeal and pharyngeal plexuses.

(6) The *Lalanâ Chakra*, opposite the uvula, which has twelve leaves (or lobes), supposed to be the tract affected in the production of ego-altruistic sentiments and affections like self-regard, pride, affection, grief, regret, respect, reverence, contentment, etc.

(7) The sensori-motor tract, comprising two Chakras, (a) the *Âjñâ Chakra*, lit. the circle of command (over

movements), with its two lobes, and (b) the *Manaschakra*, the sensorium, with its six lobes (five special sensory for peripherally initiated sensations, and one common sensory for centrally initiated sensations, as in dreams and hallucinations).

The *Ājñāvahā Nāḍī*, efferent or motor nerves, communicate motor impulses to the periphery from this *Ājñā Chakra*, this centre of command over movements; and the afferent or sensory nerves of the special senses, in pairs, the *Gandhavahā Nāḍī* (olfactory sensory), the *Rupavahā Nāḍī* (optic), the *Śrāvadavahā Nāḍī* (auditory), the *Rasavahā Nāḍī* (gustatory), and the *Sparśavahā Nāḍī* (tactile), come from the periphery (the peripheral organs of the special senses) to this *Manaschakra*, the sensory tract at the base of the brain. The *Manaschakra* also receives the *Manovahā Nāḍī*, a generic name for the channels along which centrally initiated presentations (as in dreaming or hallucination) come to the sixth lobe of the *Manaschakra*.

(8) The *Somachakra*, a sixteen-lobed ganglion, comprising the centres in the middle of the cerebrum, above the sensorium; the seat of the altruistic sentiments and volitional control, e.g. compassion, gentleness, patience, renunciation, meditateness, gravity, earnestness, resolution, determination, magnanimity, etc.; and lastly

(9) The *Sahasrāra Chakra*, thousand-lobed, the upper cerebrum with its lobes and convolutions, the special and highest seat of the *Jīva*, the soul.

गुणलिङ्गानरे चक्राधाराख्यं चतुर्दलम् । परमः सहजः ... आनन्दः ...
स्वादेशानादिदले फलं । स्वाधिष्ठानं लिङ्गमूले षट्पदं चक्रमस्यच । पृष्ठेदिषु
दलेषु फलानि रत्नानि प्रथयः कूरता ... नृन्नी ... अथवा स्वादविश्रानः

कामशक्ते रिदं गृहम् । नाभी दशदलं चक्रं मणिपूरसंज्ञं । सुषुम्निरव तृष्णा
स्वादार्था ... लज्जा भयं वृणा मोहः ... क्रमात् पृष्ठादि दलेषु स्यात्
भानुभवनं तत् ।

दृढये अनाहतं चक्रं । दलेष्टादशभिर्भुजैः । लील्यं कापट्यं पितृर्कोऽप्यनुता-
पिता आशा ... चिन्ता ... दम्भोवैकल्यं विवेकोऽहंकृतिस्तथा फलान्येतानि ।
कखेगसि भारतीस्थानं षोडशच्छदं तत्र प्रणव उद्गीतः सप्त स्वरा यज्ञादयः ।
ललनाख्यं षष्टिकायां चक्रं द्वादशपञ्चकं । दमोमानस्ततः ज्ञेहः शोकः खेदश्च
सम्भ्रमश्चोर्मिः अद्वा तोषोऽपराधिता फलानि ललनाचक्रे । भूमध्ये द्विदलं चक्रं
आशासंज्ञं फलानि च आविर्भावाः सत्स्वरजस्तमसाः । तत्र चास्ति मनश्चक्रं
षडदलं तत्फलानि तु स्वप्नो रसोपयोगश्च प्राणं रूपोपलम्भनं स्पर्शनं
ज्ञानबोधश्च पृष्ठादिषु दलेषु । ततोऽपि षोडशदलं मोमचक्रं । दलेषु षोडश
तस्य कलाः षोडश संस्थिताः । कृपाप मार्तण्डं धैर्यं वैराग्यं भूतिसम्पदो
हास्यं रोमाञ्चं विनयो ध्यानं सुस्थिरता ततः । गाम्भीर्यं मुखमोऽशोभनौदार्य-
कायेह क्रमात् । फलानुष्ठानि जीवस्य पृष्ठादिदलगामिनः । चक्रं महस्रपचनु
ब्रह्मरन्ध्रे । सुषुम्नया ब्रह्मरन्ध्रमारोहत्यपरोहति । जीवः प्राणसमारूढो रज्ज्वा
कोलादिको यथा । ब्रह्मरन्ध्रे स्थितो जीवः सुषुम्नया संयुतः । ... आधा-
रादङ्गुलादूर्ध्वं मेहनादङ्गुलादधः अग्निशिखा (चक्रं) चक्रात् तस्मात्
नवाङ्गुलः देहस्य कन्दोऽस्ति । उत्सेधायामाभ्यां चतुरङ्गुलः ब्रह्मरन्ध्ररिति प्रोक्तः ।
(संगीतरत्नाकर as summarised in Dāmodara's Sangitadarpaṇa;
vide Sangita-ratnākara, पिण्डोत्पत्तिप्रकरणं, verses 116-144)
दोषास्त्रिद्वैपय्यन्तं ब्रह्मदेहेति कथ्यते तस्याने सुषुम्नं सूक्ष्मं ब्रह्मनाडीति सूरिभिः
(उत्तरगीता)-तत् कर्णिकायां विध्यग्यापिशालासहस्रवत्या मनोवहनाद्या मूलं
तिष्ठति । तस्या खलाबुलतिकायाश्च कर्ध्वमुखे एकाशाखा सुषुम्ना इति
गीयते । स चैमनोवहा नाडी चित्रस्थानं भवति (विज्ञानभिष्य, योगवाजिक)
सुषुम्ना चोर्ध्वगामिनो ज्ञाननाडी भवेत् (*Jñāna Sankalini Tantra*).
For functions of *Ājñāvahā Nāḍī* and *Manovahā Nāḍī*,
also see Śaṅkara Miśra's *Upaskāra*.

The cerebro-spinal axis and the heart: their respective relations to the conscious life.—Vijñāna-
bhikṣu, in the passage just quoted, identifies the
Manovahā Nāḍī (vehicle of consciousness, चित्रस्थान) with

the cerebro-spinal axis and its ramifications, and compares the figure to an inverted gourd with a thousand-branched stem hanging down. The *Suṣumna*, the central passage of the spinal cord, is the stem of this gourd (or a single branch). The writers on the Yoga (including the authors of the various Tantric systems) use the term somewhat differently. On this view, the *Manovahâ Nâḍî* is the channel of the communication of the *Jiva* (soul) with the *Manaschakra* (sensorium) at the base of the brain. It has been stated that the sensory currents are brought to the sensory ganglia along afferent nerves of the special senses. But this is not sufficient for them to rise to the level of discriminative consciousness (समिप्यकज्ञानम्). A communication must now be established between the *Jiva* (in the *Sahasrâra Chakra*, upper cerebrum) and the sensory currents received at the sensorium, and this is done by means of the *Manovahâ Nâḍî*. When sensations are centrally initiated, as in dreams and hallucinations, a special *Nâḍî* (*Svapnavahâ Nâḍî*), which appears to be only a branch of the *Manovahâ Nâḍî*, serves as the channel of communication from the *Jiva* (soul) to the sensorium. In the same way, the *Âjnavahâ Nâḍî* brings down the messages of the soul from the *Sahasrâra* (upper cerebrum) to the *Âjñâ Chakra* (motor tract at the base of the brain), messages which are thence carried farther down, along efferent nerves, to various parts of the periphery. I may add that the special sensory nerves, together with the *Manovahâ Nâḍî*, are sometimes generally termed *Jñânavahâ Nâḍî*, *lit.* channel of presentative knowledge. There is no

difficulty so far. The *Manovahâ Nâdî* and the *Âjnâvahâ Nâdî* connect the sensori-motor tract at the base of the brain (*Mânaschakra* and *Âjnâchakra*) with the highest (and special) seat of the soul (*Jiva*) in the upper cerebrum (*Sahasrâra*), the one being the channel for carrying up the sensory, and the other for bringing down the motor messages. But efforts of the will (*Âjnâ*, *Prayatna*) are conscious presentations, and the *Manovahâ Nâdî* must therefore co-operate with the *Âjnâvahâ* in producing the consciousness of effort. Indeed, attention, the characteristic function of *Manas*, by which it raises sense-presentations to the level of discriminative consciousness, implies effort (*Prayatna*) on the part of the soul (*Âtman*, *Jiva*), an effort of which we are conscious through the channel of the *Manovahâ Nâdî*. But how to explain the presentation of effort in the motor nerves? Śankara Miśra, the author of the *Upaskāra* on *Kanāda's Sūtras*, argues that the *Nâdîs* (even the volitional or motor nerves) are themselves sensitive, and their affections are conveyed to the sensorium by means of the nerves of the (inner) sense of touch (which are interspersed in minute fibrillæ among them). The consciousness of effort, then, in any motor nerve, whether *Âjnâvahâ* (volitional-motor) or *Prâṇavahâ* (automatic-motor), depends on the tactile nerves (or nerves of organic sensation) mixed up with it. Thus the assimilation of food and drink by the automatic activity of the *Prâṇas* implies an (automatic) effort (जीवनयोनिप्रयत्न) accompanied by a vague organic consciousness, which is due to the fact that minute fibres of the inner touch-sense are interspersed with the

machinery of the automatic nerves (the *Prāṇavahā Nādis*).

यद्यपीन्द्रियं मनो न साक्षात् प्रयत्नविषयः तथापि मनोवहनाडोगोचरेण प्रयत्नेन मनसि कर्म दृश्यं । नाड्यास्तु त्वगिन्द्रियाद्यन्तर्गतीकर्तव्यं । अन्यथा प्राणवहनाडोगोचरेण प्रयत्नेन अक्षितपीताश्वभ्यवहरणमपि न सम्भवेत् । तत्र दिन्द्रियप्रदेशेन मनःसंयोगमन्तरेण सुखदुःखे न स्यातामेव । यदि मनसि कर्म न भवेत् न भवेच्च पादे न सुखं शिरसि न वेदना इत्याद्याकारोऽनुभवः । (Śāṅkara Mīśra's *Upaskāra*, on Sūtras 14, 15, Âhnika 2, Chap. V.).

The Heart. The heart in the older schools is considered to be the seat of waking consciousness; for the heart expands during waking life and contracts during sleep.

Sleep (स्वाप) again is of two kinds, (1) dreaming sleep (*swapna, supti*), when the external senses are withdrawn into the heart, but the representative-presentative faculty (मनः, चित्तं) wakes, and (2) dreamless sleep (*susupti*), when this last faculty is likewise merged in the mere automatic activity of life.

हृदयं पञ्चनाकृतिः । मुषिरं स्यादधोपक्वं रतच्च चेतनास्थानं । निमीलति स्वपित्वात्मा नागर्तिं विकशत्यपि । द्वेषा स्वप्नसुप्तिभ्यां स्वापः । वाय्वेन्द्रियाणि चेत् लीयन्ते हृदि नागर्तिं चित्तं मुषिरस्तदोच्यते । मनश्चेत् लीयते प्राण्ये सुप्तिः स्वाप्नदान्तनः—(*Sāṅgita-ratnākara*).

SECTION 6.

NERVE-CORDS AND FIBRES (SYMPATHETIC-SPINAL SYSTEM).

Nerve-cords and fibres—Cranial and spinal nerves, and the connected sympathetic nerves.—With the writers on the *Yoga*, all the *Śīrās*, and such of the *Dharmāns* as are not vehicles of vital current, metabolic

fluid, lymph, chyle or blood, are cranial nerves, and proceed from the heart through the spinal cord to the cranium. These cranial nerves include pairs for the larynx and the tongue, for the understanding and use of speech, for the raising and lowering of the eyelids, for weeping, for the sensations of the special senses, etc.—a confused and unintelligent reproduction of Suśruta's classification. But the enumeration of the spinal nerves with the connected sympathetic chain and ganglia, is a distinct improvement on the old anatomists. The following plan attempts to give a rough idea of the relative position of the principal nerves of the sympathetic-spinal system.



The *Suśumnā* is the central cord in the vertebral column (ब्रह्मरन्ध्र, मेरु). The two chains of sympathetic ganglia on the left and the right are named *Idā* and *Pingalā* respectively. The sympathetic nerves have their main connection with *Suśumnā* at the solar plexus (भानुमयन, नाभिचक्र in the कन्द, नाभिकन्द or ब्रह्मरन्ध्र). Of the seven hundred nerve-cords of the sympathetic-spinal

system (भूतनामः Sangita-ratnākara), the fourteen most important are :—

(1) *Suṣumnā*, in the central channel of the spinal cord.

(2) *Idā*, the left sympathetic chain stretching from under the left nostril to below the left kidney, in the form of a bent bow.

(3) *Pīṅgalā*, the corresponding chain on the right.

(4) *Kūṣṭhā*, the pudic nerve of the sacral plexus, to the left of the spinal cord.

(5) *Gāndhārī*, to the back of the left sympathetic chain, supposed to stretch from below the corner of the left eye to the left leg. It was evidently supposed that some nerves of the cervical plexus came down through the spinal cord and joined on to the great sciatic nerve of the sacral plexus.

(6) *Hastijihvā*, to the front of the left sympathetic chain, stretching from below the corner of the left eye to the great toe of the left foot, on the same supposition as before. Pathological facts were believed to point to a special nerve connection between the eyes and the toes.

(7) *Sarasvatī*, to the right of *Suṣumnā*, stretching up to the tongue (the hypo-glossal nerves of the cervical plexus).

(8) *Puṣā*, to the back of the right sympathetic chain, stretching from below the corner of the right eye to the abdomen (a connected chain of cervical and lumbar nerves).

(9) *Paṇḍarī*, between *Puṣā* and *Sarasvatī*, auricular branch of the cervical plexus on the right.

(10) *Sankhinī*, between Gāndhārī and Sarasvatī, auricular branch of the cervical plexus on the left.

(11) *Jasasvinī*, to the front of the right sympathetic chain, stretching from the right thumb to the right leg (the radial nerve of the brachial plexus continued on to certain branches of the great sciatic).

(12) *Vāranā*, the nerves of the sacral plexus, between Kuhu and Jasasvinī, ramifying over the lower trunk and limbs.

(13) *Viśvodarā*, the nerves of the lumbar plexus, between Kuhu and Hastijihvā, ramifying over the lower trunk and limbs.

(14) *Alambuṣā*, the coccygeal nerves, proceeding from the sacral vertebræ to the urino-genitary organs.

(*Vide* Sangīta-ratnākara, स्तराध्याय, पिण्डोत्पत्तिप्रकरणम्—Ślokas 144-156. Also, the Yogārṇava.)

SECTION 7.

AUTOMATIC AND REFLEX ACTIVITY OF THE ORGANISM—THE FORTY-NINE *VĀYUS*.

Charaka describes *Vāyu* as that which keeps the machine of the body at work, the prime-mover, the impelling force which sets in motion the organs (including the senses and the mind), which arranges the cells and tissues, and which unfolds or develops the foetal structure out of the fertilised ovum. Charaka and Suśruta notice the five chief *Vāyus* with their functions in the maintenance of the animal life. Suśruta mentions *Prāṇa* as having its course in the mouth, and

concerned in deglutition, hiccough, respiration, etc., *Udâna* as concerned in articulation and singing, *Samâna* as digesting the food in the stomach in conjunction with the animal heat, *Vyâna* as coursing all over the body, driving the chyle and causing the flow of blood and sweat, and *Apâna* as having its seat in the intestinal region, and sending down the urino-genital secretions. (Susruta—*Nidânasthâna*, Chapter I.)

In the mediæval physiology the number of *Vâyus* is given as 49. As in Charaka and Susruta, the *Vâyus* are regarded as the moving or impelling forces that work the organism and all its automatic and reflex machinery. The *Âjñavahû Nâḍîs* (efferent nerves) are only channels for the conduction of commands of the self or the will (चालप्रयत्न); the *Vâyus*, on the other hand, are forces (or currents) that maintain the automatic, reflex, or instinctive activities of the organism. The ten chief *Vâyus* with their functions are enumerated thus:—

(1) *Prâṇa*, which works the ideo-motor verbal mechanism and vocal apparatus, the respiratory system, the muscles engaged in coughing, sighing, etc.

(2) *Apâna*, which ejects the excretions and wastes, the urine, the fæces, the sperm and germ-cells, etc.

(3) *Vyâna*, whose work is extension, contraction, and flexion of the muscles, tendons, and ligaments; the stored-up energy of the muscles.

(4) *Samâna*, the force which, in conjunction with animal heat, works the machinery of metabolism, in the maintenance of the organic life. It drives or propels

the chyle, blood, and every other current (*Śrota*) or circulating fluid in the body.

(5) *Udāna*, concerned in maintaining the erect posture of the body.

(6) *Nāga*, which is concerned in involuntary retching, vomiting.

(7) *Kūrma*, which works the automatic movement of the eyelids, winking, etc.

(8) *Krikara*, concerned with the appetites of hunger and thirst.

(9) *Devadatta*, which brings about yawning, dozing, etc.

(10) *Dhananjaya*, which is concerned with coma, swooning, trance.

वायुः तन्त्रयन्त्रधरः प्रवर्तकः श्वेतानी, प्रखेता मनसः, सद्योन्दिवाणी उद्योतकः, सर्वशरीरपातुष्पूहकरः, सन्धानकरः शरीरस्य, प्रवर्तको वाचः, हयोत्साहयोयोनिः, खेमा बहिर्मलानी, कर्ता गर्भाकृतीनी । प्राणायानोदानसमानव्यानात्मा (चरक सूत्रस्यान, Chap. XII.) तेषां मुख्यतमः प्राणः शब्दोच्चारणनिःश्वासोच्वास-काशादिकारणं, अपानः . . . अस्य मूत्रपुरीषादिविसर्गः कर्म्मं प्रकीर्तितं । व्यानः . . . प्राणायानमृतिस्वागयहृष्टाद्यस्य कर्म्मं च । समानोऽपि अखिलं व्याप्य शरीरं वह्निना सह । द्विसप्तति सहस्रेषु नाड्यरेषु संचरन् भुक्तपोतरसान् सम्यगानयन् देहपट्टिकम् । उदानः कर्म्मास्य देहोन्नयनोत्क्रमणादि प्रकीर्तितं । त्वगादिधातूनां धिक् पंचनागादयःस्थिताः उद्वारादि निनेषादि क्षुत्पिपासादिर्कं क्रमात् । तन्माप्रभृति मोहादि तेषां कर्म्मं प्रकीर्तितं । (संगीतरत्नाकर १)

Cf. the summary in Raja Sourindra Mohan Tagore's edition of the *Saṅgita-darpana*.

शब्दोच्चारणं (वाङ्मन्यश्चिकरणं) निश्वासः उच्वासः (अन्तर्मुखश्वासः) तन्मादीनां कारणं (साधनं) प्राणवायुः । विश्वमूत्रशुक्रादिवहन्मपानस्य कर्म्मं । खाकुचनप्रसारणादि व्यानस्य कर्म्मं ज्ञेयं । अज्ञितपोतादिनां समतानयनद्वारा शरीरस्य पोषणं समानस्य कर्म्मं । उदानवायुः ऊर्ध्वानयनमेव अस्य कर्म्मं नागादयः नागकर्म्मकृत्करदेवदत्तधनञ्जयरूपाः पञ्च वायवः । एतेषां कर्म्माणि

च यथाक्रमं उदगारोन्मीलनक्षुभाजननविनृम्भननोहरूपाणि । (*Saṅgita-darpana*, Chap. I., Śloka 43-48). Cf. the extract in Śankara.

प्रायः प्राग्वृत्तिरुद्वासादिकम्मी । अयानः अवाग्वृत्तिरुत्सर्गादिकम्मी । ध्यानः तपोः सन्धी वर्तमानः योर्वैवत्कर्महेतुः । उदानः ऊर्ध्ववृत्तिः उत्क्रान्त्यादि हेतुः । समानः समं सङ्घेयु अङ्गेयु यः सवरमान् नयति । इति । (*Śārīraka Bhāṣya*, Chap. II., Pada 4, Sūtra 2).

SECTION 8.

FETAL DEVELOPMENT (AFTER SUSRUTA).¹

The ovum fertilised by the sperm-cell and developing under the influence of animal heat forms successive layers and tissues, even as layers of cells and fibres are formed in wood. First are formed seven layers, epithelial and dermal (*Saptatwachah*), then follow the several tissues (*Kalāh*), the flesh, the vascular tissue, the fat and marrow, the lymphatic and (glandular) tissue, the intestinal tissues, the biliary and the seminal vessels. These tissues are regarded by some as modifications of the original dermal layers of the ovum (cf. the layers of the blastoderm and their relation to the tissues in Embryology). The tissues are supposed to be developed successively, one out of another, by chemical action or metabolism (*pāka*), e.g. chyle is transformed into blood, blood into flesh, flesh into fat, fat into bone, bone (in reality, fat in the bones) into marrow, marrow into sperm-cell. The organs are next formed out of the tissues. The liver, gall-bladder (*kloma*), spleen, and

¹ Reproduced from my monograph in Dr. Ray's "Hindu Chemistry," Vol. II.

lungs are referred to the blood; the intestines to the blood, lymph, and bile; the kidneys to the blood and fat; the testicles to the blood, lymph, and fat; the heart to the blood and lymph; and the tongue to the lymph, blood, and flesh. *Vāyu*, with the accompaniment of animal heat, impels the "currents" (*śrotāṃsi*) in the system; *Vāyu* acting on the flesh gives rise to the muscles; and it is *Vāyu*, again, which, with the essence of fat (or marrow), produces the nerves, arteries, and tendons (*Suśruta*, *Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. IV., and *Sūtra-sthāna*, Chap. XIV.).

The following parts (tissues and organs) in the foetus are in a special sense modifications of the four organic substances (compounds) contributed by the sperm-cell of the male parent: hair, nails, teeth, bones, nerves, veins and arteries, tendons and ligaments, and the sperm-cell; the following are modifications of the four organic substances derived from the mother: skin, blood, flesh, fat, the heart, liver and spleen, kidneys, stomach, intestines, etc. (*Charaka*, *Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. III.).

The rudiments of the head and the limbs begin to appear in the third month, and are developed in the fourth; the bones, ligaments, nails, hair, etc., become distinct in the sixth. In the second month the sexual character is indicated by the shape of the foetus, the shape of a round joint (?) indicating the male sex, and an elongated shape, as of a muscle (?), the female sex. (*Cf.* *Charaka*, *Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. IV.—*द्वितीयेमांश्च यनः सम्पद्यते पित्तः पेश्यर्बुदं वा । तत्र यनः पित्तः पुरुषः स्त्री पेशी चर्बुदं नर्पुमकः* Chakrapāṇi notes यनः कठिनः । पित्तो यन्मयाकारः । पेशी दीर्घेमांश्च पेश्याकारा । चर्बुदं चर्बुलोद्धत *loc. cit.*)

SECTION 9.

HEREDITY.

Transmission of specific characters—what parental characters are transmitted to offspring.—The question is raised in Charaka (and earlier still in the *Brāhmanas*) how specific characters are transmitted—why the offspring is of the same species as the parental organism, say, the human or bovine species, the equine species (Charaka), or the Asvattha species, *Ficus religiosa* (Śankara, *Bṛihadāraṇyaka-bhāṣya*). Species (योग्यः) may be compared to so many moulds, as it were, into which the ovum is cast, even as molten metals are cast in moulds. This is of course only an illustrative analogy; the cause has to be investigated.

Now Charaka and Susruta, following Dhanvantari, hold that the foetus, or rather the fertilised ovum, develops by palingenesis (instead of epigenesis); in other words, all the organs are potentially present therein at the same time, and unfold in a certain order. As the sprouting bamboo-seed contains in miniature the entire structure of the bamboo, as the mango-blossom contains the stone, the pulp, the fibres, which appear separated and distinct in the ripe fruit, though from their excessive minuteness they are undistinguishable in the blossom, even such is the case with the fertilised ovum.

गर्भस्य हि सम्भवतः . . . सर्वोद्गमप्रत्यङ्गानि युगपत् सम्भवन्ति इत्याह धन्वन्तरिः । गर्भस्य मूलत्वात् नोपलभ्यते वंशाङ्कुरपत् चूतफलवच्च तद्यथा चूतफले परिपक्वे केशरनासास्थिमज्जानः पृथक् दृश्यन्ते कालप्रकर्षात् । तान्येव तस्यैव नोपलभ्यन्ते मूलत्वात् । तेषां केशरादीनां कालः प्रत्यङ्गतां करोति एतेनैव वंशाङ्कुरोर्गर्भे व्याख्यातः । एवं गर्भस्य तारुस्ये सर्वेषु चङ्गप्रत्यङ्गेषु सन्तु मूलस्यैव-

नुपलभिः तावदेव फलप्रकर्षात् प्रत्यङ्गानि भवन्ति । (Susruta, *Śārīra sthāna*, Chap. III.).

The inheritance of specific characters is explained in accordance with this view. Charaka assumes that the sperm-cell of the male parent contains minute elements derived from each of its organs and tissues. (Cf. Darwin's gemmule and Spencer's "ids.") Śankara similarly states that the sperm-cell (or the seed in the case of a plant) represents in miniature every organ of the parent organism, and contains *in potentia* the whole organism that is developed out of it (शरीरोपात्वात्मा शुक्रभूतः अङ्गादङ्गात् सम्भवति । Charaka, *Śārīrasthāna*, Chap. IV.; cf. Śankara on *Bṛihadāraṇyaka*).

But if this is so, why are not congenital deformities of the parent, or constitutional diseases contracted in later life, invariably inherited? Congenital blindness, deafness, dumbness, stammering, lameness, or deformity of the spinal column or of the bony framework, or dwarfish stature, or constitutional diseases like madness, leprosy, or skin diseases in the parent, do not necessarily produce corresponding deformities or infirmities in the offspring. It cannot therefore be that the fertilised ovum represents in miniature every organ and tissue of the parental organisms. The solution of this difficulty Charaka ascribes to Ātreya. The fertilised ovum, it is true, is composed of elements which arise from the whole parental organism (समुदायात्मक, समुदायप्रभव), but it is not the developed organs of the parents, with their idiosyncracies or acquired characters, that determine or contribute the elements of the sperm-cell (or seed). The parental Vija (seed, germ-plasm) contains the whole

parental organism in miniature (or in *potentia*), but it is independent of the parents' developed organs, and is not necessarily affected by their idiosyncracies or deformities. In fact, the parental Vija (seed, germ-plasm) is an organic whole independent of the developed parental body and its organs. In the parental Vija an element representing a particular organ or tissue may happen (for this is accidental, दैव) to be defective or undeveloped, or otherwise abnormally characterised, and in this case the corresponding organ or tissue of the offspring will be similarly characterised. When constitutional diseases, acquired in later life, are found to be inherited, Âtreya would suppose that the Vija of the parent has been affected, and this would explain the fact of the inheritance. In the case of leprosy, for example, it is transmitted to the offspring only when the germ-plasm (the Vija or the fertilised ovum) is infected with the virus of the disease by reason of the leprosy of the parent (*vide* Charaka's report of Âtreya's theory, *Śārīrasthāna*).

एवमयं नानाविधानां एषां गर्भकराणां भावानां समुदायादभिनिवर्तते गर्भः ।
यद्यप्येषां नानाविधानां गर्भकराणां भावानां समुदायादभिनिवर्तते गर्भः कचमयं
सन्धोयते । यदि चापि सन्धीयते कस्मात् समुदायप्रभवः सन् गर्भो मनुष्यविग्रहेण
जायते मनुष्यश्च मनुष्यप्रभवः । उच्यते । . . . तत्र चेत् इहमेतत्तस्मात् मनुष्योन्मुष्य-
प्रभवः तस्मादेव मनुष्यविग्रहेण जायते यथा गौर्गोप्रभवः यथा चाश्वः अश्वप्रभवः
इत्येवं यदुक्तं अग्रे समुदायात्मक इति तदुक्तं । यदि च मनुष्यः मनुष्यप्रभवः
कस्मात् जडान्धकुम्भमृकवामनमिन्धपयस्त्रोन्मज्जकुष्ठकिलासेभ्यो जाताः पितृसदृशा
न भवन्ति *et seq.* यद्युक्तं यदि च मनुष्यो मनुष्यप्रभवः कस्मात्
जडादिभ्यो जाताः पितृसदृशरूपा न भवन्तीति तत्रोच्यते यस्य यस्यहि जङ्गावयवस्य
चोत्ते चोत्तभाव उपतप्तो भवति तस्य तस्य जङ्गावयवस्य विकृतिः उपजायते ।
नोपजायते च अनुपतापात् तस्मात् उभयोपपन्निरप्यच । सर्वस्य च ज्ञातृज्ञानीन्दि-

याणि तेषां भाषाभाषहेतुः देवं । तस्माच्चैकान्ततो नडादिभ्यो जाताः पितृसदृशरूपा भवन्ति । (चरक, शारीरस्थान, तृतीयपरिच्छेद) दम्पत्योः कुम्भपाहुस्याहुश्छोशित-शुक्रयोः । यदपत्नं तयोर्जातं त्वेयं तदपि कुष्ठितं ।

N.B.—The seventh tissue (the *Sukradharâ kalâ*, sperm-bearing or reproductive) contains the parental *Vija*, which is a minute organism (समुदायात्मक) deriving its elements from the parental organs, but distinct from the latter, and independent of their peculiarities, and it is the combination and characters of these constituent elements of the parental *Vija* in the reproductive tissue that determine the physiological characters and predispositions of the offspring. We may call this *Âtreya's germ-plasm* theory, for it is an advance on the conception of gemmules and of ids, but in *Âtreya's* version the "germ-plasm" is not only representative of the "somatic" tissues, but also generates and is generated by the latter. This mutual interaction of the "germ-plasm" and "somatic tissues" is a distinctive feature of *Âtreya's* hypothesis, the value of which will be differently estimated by different schools of biologists.

I may also add that the continued identity of the germ-plasm (बीज) from generation to generation, though it follows as a corollary from this doctrine of a distinct reproductive tissue, even when conceived to be affected by somatic processes, as *Âtreya* and *Charaka* conceive it to be, is nowhere expressly deduced. On the other hand, *Âtreya* and *Charaka* emphasise the influence of abundant or defective nutrition, and of the constituents of the food, etc., on the characters of the *Vija* in the reproductive tissue, especially as regards the sexual character, the stature, and the colour-pigment

(ब्रह्म) of the offspring. But though the influence of nutrition on the Vija is thus freely admitted in a general way, it is expressly stated that the peculiar characters or idiosyncracies of the elements that combine to form the Vija must be regarded as a matter of chance (दैव), in other words, the truly congenital variations are accidental.

SECTION 10.

THE SEX QUESTION.

Influence of nutrition on the ovum, especially as regards the sex, stature, and colour-pigment of the resulting offspring.—In a general way, ghee and milk for the male, and oil and beans for the female parent, are favourable to the Vija. The sexual character of the offspring depends in part on a periodicity to which the life-history of the ovum in the female parent is conceived to be subject—a law of alternate rhythmic change (not unlike what we now know to regulate the development of several orders of bacteria or unicellular organisms), a law under which the fertilisation of the ovum on the fourth day after the menstrual discharge, or on the alternate days succeeding, is favourable to the foetus developing the male sexual character, and on the fifth, seventh, and alternate following days to the foetus assuming the female sex. The *Prayogachintāmaṇi* states that the latter occurs on even days, and the former on odd days. Another factor is the relative predominance of the sperm and the germ cells in the fertilised ovum. Excess of the sperm-cell produces the male, that of the germ-cell the female. For male

offspring of tall stature, fair complexion, and energetic temperament, wheat-pulp with honey, ghee (clarified butter), and milk should be taken by the female parent. Generally speaking, the adoption of the food, clothing, habits of people of any particular clime are supposed to be favourable to the production of their characteristic stature and complexion. As to sex, the foetus for a time remains indeterminate, and then takes on a definite male or female character, but before this stage is reached the development of the sex can be modified to some extent by food and drugs (पुंसवननीयध). As for the colour-pigment, it is the animal heat (त्रेनोधातु) which is its source; but where the *Ākāśa* and *Ap* particles predominate (in the food) the animal heat (of the metabolic processes) produces a fair complexion; where Earth and *Vāyu* particles predominate in the food, blackness is the result; and where the different *Bhutas* are combined in nearly equal proportion in the food, the metabolic heat produces a dark pigment. In the later literature, ghee (clarified butter) habitually taken by the female during gestation is supposed to produce a fair complexion, and rice (or wheat) and salads a dark complexion. Charaka also holds that mental impressions of the parent are powerful factors in the determination of the characters of the offspring.

यथाहि बीजननुपपन्नं उन्नं स्त्री स्त्री प्रकृतिं अनुविधीयते ब्रीहिर्वा ब्रीहित्वं यद्येवा यत्त्वं तथा स्त्रीपुरुषौ अपि यथोक्तं हेतुविभागं अनुविधीयते । . . . तस्मादापद्यगर्भो स्त्रियमभिमनोऽस्य प्राग् व्यक्तीभावात् गर्भस्य पुंसवननीयधमस्य दद्यात् । . . . ज्ञानात् प्रभृति युग्मेषु अहःसु संगमनां पुत्रजानी ती जयुग्मेषु दुहितृजानी । . . . उपाचरेच्च मधुरीयधसंस्कृतान्मां घृतखीराभ्यां पुरुषं स्त्रियन्तु तैलमाभ्यां । साधेत एवमाज्ञासीत बृहन्नमपदानं हर्म्यं चोन्नमिनं शुभिं

सत्त्वसम्पन्नं पुत्रमिच्छेयमिति । शुद्धज्ञानात् प्रभृति तस्यै मधुसूदिभ्यो संसृज्य
 श्वेतायाः गोः स्वरूपवत्सायाः पयसा खालभ्य राजते कांस्ये वा पात्रे काले काले
 सप्ताहं सततं प्रयच्छेत् पानाय । . . . या येषां जनपदानां मनुष्याणां अनुकूपं
 पुत्रमाशासीत् सा तेषां जनपदानां मनुष्याणां आहारविहारोपचारपरिच्छदान्
 अनुविधीयस्व इति वाच्या स्यात् ।

न खलु केवलमेतदेव कर्म्म यत्कीणां वैशेष्यकरं अपि तु तेजोधातुरपि उद-
 कान्तरीक्षधातुः प्रायः अवदातवर्णकरो भवति । पृथिवीवासुधातुः प्रायः कृष्ण-
 वर्णकरः । समस्तवैधातुः प्रायः श्यामवर्णकरः । आधिक्ये रेतसः पुत्रः,
 कन्या स्यात् सार्ववेगधिके ।

SECTION 11.

LIFE.

These activities maintain the life of the organism, but what is this life itself?

The *Chârvâkas* (materialists and sensationalists) answer that life (as well as consciousness) is a result of peculiar chemical combinations of dead matter (or the four elements) in organic forms, even as the intoxicating property of spirituous liquors results from the fermentation of unintoxicating rice and molasses. Similarly, the instinctive movements and expressions of new-born babes (sucking, joy, grief, fear, etc.) can be explained mechanically as due to external stimuli as much as the opening and closing of the lotus and other flowers at different hours of the day (or night), or the movement of iron under the influence of the loadstone. In the same way, the spontaneous generation of living organisms is frequently observed, e.g. the case of animalcules which develop in moisture or infusions, especially under the influence of gentle warmth (स्वेदन, उष्णन, दीप्तिप्रकादयः), or of the maggots or other worms which in the rainy season,

by reason of the atmospheric moisture, are developed in the constituent particles of curds and the like, which begin to live and move in so short a time.

Gotama, in his *Sûtras*, reports the Chârvâka explanation of instinctive emotional expressions in babes: पदनादिषु प्रबोधसंस्मीलितवत् तड्डिकारः—*Sûtra* 20, *Âhnika* 1, Chapter III.; *cf.* the explanation of the movement preparatory to sucking: जयसो ह्यस्त्वान्नाभिगमनवत् तदुपसर्पणं—*Sûtra* 23, *ibid.* Jayanta, in the *Nyâya-manjarî*, reports the Chârvâka explanation of consciousness (and life).

मदशक्तिवत् विज्ञानं । पृथिव्यादीनि भूतानि चत्वारि तत्त्वानि । तेभ्य एव देहाकारपरिणतेभ्यः मदशक्तिवत् चैतन्यमुपजायते ।

For spontaneous generation, *vide* Jayanta's report:—

यवौमुच स्वेदादिना अनतिदूरीयस्य कालेन दध्नाद्यवयवा एव चलन्तः पृतनादिक्रिमिरूपा उपलभ्यन्ते ।—*Nyâya-manjarî*, *Âhnika* 7, भूतचैतन्यपक्षः ।

The Sâṅkhya view of consciousness—Reply to the materialists:—

The intoxicating power in liquor is a force, *i.e.* a tendency to motion, and this is the resultant of the tendencies (or subtile motions) present in the particles of the fermented rice, molasses, etc. A motion, or a tendency to motion, can in this way be the resultant of several other motions or tendencies. But consciousness (चैतन्य) is not a motion, and cannot be the resultant of (unconscious) natural forces or motions. Neither can the consciousness of the Self, or of the organism as a whole, be supposed to be the resultant of innumerable consciousnesses vested in the innumerable constituent particles of the body. One central abiding intelligence

is a simpler and therefore more legitimate hypothesis than an assemblage of consciousnesses latent in different Bhûtas or particles, cf. Vijnâna-bhikṣu's comment on the Sûtra मदशक्तिवचेत् प्रत्येकपरिदृष्टे साहच्ये तदुद्भवः (Sûtra 22, Chapter III.) ननु यथा मादकताशक्तिः प्रत्येकद्रव्यापृच्छिरपि मिलितद्रव्ये वर्जते एवं चैतन्यमपि स्यादिति चेन्न प्रत्येकपरिदृष्टे सति साहच्ये तदुद्भवः सम्भवेत् । प्रकृते तु प्रत्येकपरिदृष्टत्वं नास्ति . . . ननु समुच्चिते चैतन्यदर्शनेन प्रत्येकभूते मूलचैतन्यशक्तिरनुमेया इति चेन्न । अनेकभूतेषु अनेकचैतन्यशक्तिकल्पनायां गौरवेण लाघवादेकस्यैव नित्यचित्सवरूपस्य कल्पनीयत्वात् । Cf. also भूतगतपिशेयगुणानां सनातोपकारणगुणजन्यतया कारणे चैतन्ये विना देहे चैतन्यासम्भवात् । (ibid.).

मध्ये मदशक्तिर्ने गुणः । मद्यारम्भकानां पिष्टगुडमध्वादीनां यत् यस्य कर्मे तै कर्मेभिरारम्भे स्वस्वकर्मेपिरोधिकर्मे यदुच्यते प्रभाव इति । चैतन्यादिर्बन्धनं न कर्मे । (Gangâdhara's *Jalpakaḥpataru* (1867, Calcutta), explaining the distinction between property (गुण) and power (प्रभाव), a technical term in medicine, which denotes a form of motion (कर्मे) *Sâtrasthâna*, *Jalpakaḥpataru*).

The Sâṅkhya view of Prâṇa (life):—

Life, according to the Sâṅkhya, is not a *Vâyu* (bio-mechanical force) nor any mere mechanical motion resulting from the impulsion of *Vâyu*. The five vital operations, Prâṇa, Apâna, etc., are called *Vâyus*, but this is only a metaphor. Life is in reality a reflex activity, a resultant of the various concurrent activities of the *Antahkarana*s, i.e. of the sensori-motor (ज्ञानेन्द्रिय कर्मेन्द्रिय), the emotional (मनः) and the apperceptive reactions of the organism (for some add अहङ्कार).

Vijnâna-bhikṣu notes that this explains the disturbing (elevating or depressing) effect on the vitality of pleasurable or painful emotions, like love (काम), which

are activities of *Manas*, one of the *Antahkaranas* concerned in the reactions of the living organism. On the Sāṅkhya view, then, *Prāṇa* or life is not a *Vāyu*, nor is it evolved from the Bhutas, inorganic matter. *Prāṇa* is only a complex reflex activity (सम्भूयैका वृत्ति) resulting from the operations of the psycho-physical principles or forces in the organism. Cf. Śāṅkara reporting the Sāṅkhya view—करणानि नियतवृत्तयः सन्तः सम्भूयैका प्राणाख्या वृत्तिं प्रतिपद्यन्ते ।—*Śārīraka-bhāṣya*, Chapter II., Pada 4, Sūtra 9. सामान्यकरणवृत्तिः प्राणाद्या वायवः पञ्च ।—*Īśvarakṛiṣṇa*, Kārikā. Also Sūtra 31, Chapter II., where Vijnāna-bhikṣu notes :—

वायुवत् सञ्चारात् वायवः प्रसिद्धाः । अस्माकं नायं नियमः यदिन्द्रियवृत्तिः क्रमशैव भवति नैकदा । जातिसाङ्ग्यस्य अस्माकं अदोषत्वात् । सामग्र्योपसम्पत्तौ सति अनेकैरपीन्द्रियैः एकदैकवृत्त्युत्पादने बाधकं नास्ति ।—*Vijnāna-bhikṣu*, *Pravachana - bhāṣya*, Chapter II., Sūtras 31, 32. मनोधर्मस्य कामादेः प्राणद्योभक्त्या सामानाधिकरत्येनैव शोषितत्वात् ।—*ibid.*

The Vedāntic View of Prāṇa.

The Vedāntists are believers in an independent vital principle. They agree with the Sāṅkhyas in holding that *Prāṇa* is neither a *Vāyu* nor the operation of a *Vāyu*. But neither is life a mere reflex or resultant of concurrent sensori-motor, emotive and apperceptive reactions of the organism. You may put eleven birds in a cage, and if they concurrently and continually strike against the bars of the cage in the same direction, the cage may move on under this conjoint action. But the sensory and motor activities cannot in this way originate the vital activity of the organism. For the deprivation of any one or more of the senses does not

mean a deprivation of life, and above all there is this radical distinction : there is sameness of kind (समजातीयत्व) between the motions of the individual birds and the resultant motion of the cage, but the sensations do not explain life. *Life* (Prāṇa) must therefore be recognised as a separate principle, just as the *Manas* and the *Antahkarana*s generally are in the Sāṅkhya Philosophy. Life is a sort of subtle rarefied "ether-principle" (सध्यात्मवायु) pervasive of the organism—which is not gross *Vāyu*, but is all the same subtilised matter, like the *Manas* itself, for, in the Vedānta, everything other than the Self (आत्मा) is "material" (नद).

This Life is prior to the senses, for it regulates the development of the fertilised ovum, which would putrefy if it were not living, and the senses with their apparatus develop subsequently out of the ovum (न वायुक्रिये पृथगुपदेशात्), Chapter II., Pada 4, Sūtra 9; *vide* Śarīraka-Bhāṣya Śāṅkara; also Vāchaspati Miśra, Bhāmatī :—

मिहानस्तु न समानेन्द्रियवृत्तिः प्राणः । स हि मिलितानां वा वृत्तिभेदेत् प्रत्येकं वा । न तावत् मिलितानां । एकद्विविधवृत्तिरिन्द्रियाभावे तदभावप्रसङ्गात् । न खलु चूर्णहरिद्रासंयोगजन्माग्न्युत्पत्त्ययोरन्यतराभावे भवितुमर्हति । न च बहुविधिसाध्ये शिथिकोडहनं द्विविधिसाध्ये भवति । न च त्वगेकसाध्यं । तथा सति सामान्यवृत्तिनानुपपत्तेः । अपि च यत् सम्भूयकारकाणि निष्पादयन्ति तत् प्रधानव्यापारानुगुणावानरव्यापारेणैव । यथा वयसां प्रातिष्ठिको व्यापारः पित्ररचालनानुगुणः । इह तु अवसाद्यवानरव्यापारोपेतः प्राणा न सम्भूय प्राण्युरिति युक्तं प्रनाशाभावादत्यन्तविजातीयत्वाच्च अथवादिभ्यः प्राणानस्य । . . . तस्मादन्यो वायुक्रियाभ्यां प्राणः । . . . वायुरेवायमध्यात्मतानापन्नः मुख्योऽपि प्राणः । —Śāṅkara, *ibid.* Cf. also, ज्येष्ठ प्राणः शुक्रनिषेककालादारभ्य तस्य वृत्तिलाभात् । नचेत् तस्य तदानां वृत्तिलाभः स्यात् शुक्रं पूयेत् न सम्भवेद्वा ओषादीनानु कर्णशृङ्गुत्यादित्यानविभागनिष्पत्ती वृत्तिलाभाच्च ज्येष्ठत्वं । —Śāṅkara, on Sūtra 9, Pāda 4, Chapter II.

CHAPTER VII.

ON THE SCIENTIFIC METHOD OF
THE HINDUS.

The Doctrine of Scientific Method.—A study of the Hindu Methodology of Science is absolutely essential to a right understanding of Hindu positive Science, its strength and its weakness, its range and its limitations. Apart from this rigorous scientific method, Hindu Chemistry, for example, would be all practical recipe, or all unverified speculation. This, however, would be a very inadequate and indeed erroneous view of this early achievement of the human mind. That the whole movement was genuinely and *positively* scientific, though arrested at an early stage, will appear from the following brief synopsis of the Hindu Methodology of Science.

Criterion or Test of Truth, after the Buddhists.—The ultimate criterion of Truth is found, not in mere cognitive presentation, but in the correspondence between the cognitive and the practical activity of the Self, which together are supposed to form the circuit of consciousness. That knowledge is valid which prompts an activity ending in fruition. (*Cf.* the distinction between सम्वादिज्ञान and विस्मवादिज्ञान : Also compare प्रमाणातोऽर्थप्रतिपत्ती प्रवृत्तिमानर्थ्यात् अर्थवत् प्रमाणम्—Vātsyāyana.) Truth, the Buddhists contend, is *not* self-evidence, *not*

the agreement between ideas, *nor* the agreement of the idea with the reality beyond, if any, for this cannot be attained direct, but the harmony of experience (सम्वाद), which is implied when the volitional reaction, that is prompted by a cognition and that completes the circuit of consciousness, meets with fruition, *i.e.* realises its immediate end (with this compare Sriharsha, Khandana Khanda Khādyā, on the relation of प्रमा to लोकव्यवहार). This is the material aspect of Truth. The formal aspect is given in a principle which governs all presentations in consciousness, and which combines the three moments of Identity, non-Contradiction, and Excluded Middle in every individual cognitive operation [तदुक्तं तत् परिच्छिन्नमिदं (identity) अन्यद् अपरिच्छिन्नमिदं (non-contradiction) नृतीयप्रकाराभावे च सूचयति (excluded middle) इति एकप्रमाणव्यापारः—Jayanta, Nyāyamañjarī, प्रमाणादिविध्यलक्षणम्].

Perception.—The conditions of Perception, and its range and limits, were carefully studied. The minima sensible (*e.g.* the minimum visibile, the Trasarenu, the just-perceptible mote in the slanting sunbeam), the infra-sensible (अनुद्रुतकृप, सूक्ष्म, sometimes termed अतीन्द्रिय), the obscured (अभिभूत, *e.g.* a meteor in the mid-day blaze), and the potential (अनुद्रुतवृत्ति), are distinguished; but finer instruments of measurement were wanting, and this was a principal cause of arrested progress. It may be noted that the measurement of the relative pitch of musical tones was remarkably accurate (*vide* my Paper on Hindu Mechanics and Physics).

Observation (दर्शन—Vāchaspati and Udayana).—The entire apparatus of scientific method proceeded on the basis of observed instances carefully analysed and

sifted. This was the source of the physico-chemical theories and classifications, but in Anatomy the Hindus went one step farther; they practised dissection on dead bodies for purposes of demonstration. Ingenious directions are given, *e.g.*, the body must be first disembowelled and wrapped round with the *kusa* and other grasses, then kept immersed in still water for seven days, after which the medical student should proceed to remove the layers of the skin with a carefully prepared brush made of the fresh elastic fibres of green bamboos, which will enable the tissues, vessels and ducts to be observed. Post-mortem operations as well as major operations in obstetric surgery (the extraction of the foetus, etc.) were availed of for embryological observations (*e.g.*, it is stated that the rudiments of the head and the limbs begin to appear in the foetus in the third month, and are developed in the fourth; the bones, ligaments, nails, hair, etc., becoming distinct in the sixth), and also embryological theories, *e.g.*, the indication of sexual character in the second month by the shape of the foetus, the shape of a *round* joint indicating the male sex, and an *elongated* shape the female sex (*cf.* Charaka, Sūtrasthāna, Chap. IV.—द्वितीये मासि घनः सम्पद्यते पित्तः पेश्यष्टुर्दं वा । तत्र घनः पित्तः पुरुषः स्त्री पेशी षष्ठुर्दं नरुसकम् । Chakrapāṇi notes : घनः कठिनः । पित्तो रान्ध्याकारः । पेशी दीर्घमांसपेश्याकारः । षष्ठुर्दं वर्तुलोच्चतम् *loc. cit.*). In Phonetics (as in the Prātisākhya, circa 600 B.C.), in Descriptive and Analytical Grammar (as in Pāṇini), and in some important respects in Comparative Grammar (as in Hemachandra's Grammar of the Prākṛita

Dialects), the observation was precise, minute, and thoroughly scientific. This was also the case in *Materia Medica* and in *Therapeutics*, especially the symptomology of diseases. In *Meteorology* the Hindus used the rain-gauge in their weather forecasts for the year, made careful observations of the different kinds of clouds and other atmospheric phenomena (*e.g.*, they estimate the heights of clouds, the distance from which lightning is ordinarily visible or the thunder is heard, the area of disturbance of different earthquakes, the height to which the terrestrial atmosphere extends, etc.; *vide* Varāhamihira, Sripati, and the authorities quoted by Utpala). In *Astronomy* the observation was, generally speaking, very defective, as in the determination of the solar and the planetary elements, and this was probably due to the lack of practical interest, but the determination of the lunar constants entering into the calculation of lunar periods and eclipses, matters in which the Hindus had a practical ceremonial interest, reached a remarkable degree of approximation (much above Græco-Arab computations) to the figures in Laplace's Tables, which can only be explained by the circumstance that in the case of these constants the Hindus carried out for more than a thousand years a systematic process of verification and correction by comparison of the computed with the observed results (like the navigator's correction of the course of the ship at sea), a process which was termed *दृग्गणितैक्य*. In *Zoology* the enumeration of the species of *Vermes*, *Insecta*, *Reptilia*, *Batrachia*, *Aves*, etc., makes a fair beginning, but the classification

proceeds on external characters and habits of life, and not on an anatomical basis. In Botany the observation was mainly in the interests of *Materia Medica*, and the classification was as superficial as possible. (*Vide* my Paper on the Hindu Classification of Plants and Animals.)

Experiments.—Experiments were of course conducted for purposes of chemical operations in relation to the arts and manufactures, *e.g.* Metallurgy, Pharmacy, Dyeing, Perfumery and Cosmetics, Horticulture, the making and polishing of glass (lenses and mirrors of various kinds are mentioned, the spherical and oval गुब्बारा and बुल्ल being well known—Pliny indeed mentions that the best glass ever made was Indian glass). And the results of such experiments were freely drawn upon for building up scientific hypotheses and generalisations. But of experiment as an *independent* method of proof or discovery the instances recorded in books are rare. I may note one interesting example in Udayana's *Kiranāvali*, relating to the weight of air. Udayana argues that air must be a distinct and independent *Bhūta*, for if air were a form of the Earth-*Bhūta*, it would have weight, and it has none. To prove the absence of weight, he refers to an experiment. A small bladder made of a thin membrane, filled with air, will not cause a greater descent in the scale than the same bladder weighed empty. Hence the air possesses no weight. Then Udayana makes an interesting statement. It may be objected, he says, by one who accepts the weight of air, that this argument is inconclusive; for a counter-experiment may be suggested. The

balloon filled with smoke (or gas, धूम) rises in the air, whereas the air-filled balloon comes down. This would go to show that air has weight. Udayana replies that this would only show that both smoke (or gas, धूम) and air have no weight. The Hindus appear to have been ignorant of the principle of Archimedes. Vallabhachāryya, in the *Līlāvati*, it is true, speaks of a peculiar resistance to sinking (or gravity) exercised by water, which explains the tendency in certain objects to float or to come up to the surface of the water, but the description does not show that he had any clear ideas on the subject. Mathurānātha, again, states that the determination of the degree of purity (the carat) of gold by rubbing against the assaying-stone and observing the character of the yellowish streak against the black smooth background, is only an indirect means of ascertaining weight (गुरुत्ववैलक्षण्य, *lit.* specific gravity)—which seems to suggest that there was a more direct means of arriving at the latter. Probably this refers to the common Indian method of comparing the lengths and weights of wires of uniform thickness that can be formed by drawing different pieces of gold through the same diamond bore. I think it may be regarded as fairly certain that the Hindus were ignorant of Archimedes' discovery, an ignorance which, at any rate, they could not have well borrowed from the Greeks, no more than they could have thus borrowed their knowledge of things unknown to the Greeks themselves.

[*Cf.* Udayana, *Kīranāvalī*:—वायुनिरूपणम्, किं च (वायोः) पृथिवीति गुरुत्वमपि स्यात् । न च पचनापूरितस्य चर्मपुटकादेः अपूरणदशात्:

अधिकं अवगमनम् । उन्नीयमानस्य धूमापूरितेन इदम् अनैकान्तिकं इति चेत् न । अलं धूमदग्नायां तत्रापि गरिमविशेषहेतोरवनतिविशेषस्य अप्रतीतिः । —*cf.* Vallabhāchāryya, *Līlāvati*—गुरुत्वविशेषेण पाषाणालावु-
प्रभृतिषु मज्जनोन्मज्जननियमवत् अदृष्टहेतुकतासाम्येऽपि पतनोत्पतननियमो
भविष्यतीति चेत् न । जलाधोगमने जलेन धारणं पतनप्रतिबन्ध उन्मज्जनं
एतच्च जलस्य योगस्य कस्यचिदेव पतनप्रतिबन्धसाम्येयात् । दृष्टहेतुकमेव
मज्जनञ्च उन्मज्जनञ्च ।] *Cf.* Mathurānātha, सन्निकर्षपादरहस्य on
Gāṅgeśa's *Tattvachintāmaṇi*—तस्य (निकर्षोपलस्य) न सुवर्ण-
पीताभिव्यञ्जकत्वं किन्तु पीतद्वारा गुरुत्ववैलक्षण्यव्यञ्जकत्वेनैव तस्य ।

Fallacies of Observation.—*Mal-observation* and *Non-observation*:—These were carefully studied in relation to errors of observation, and hallucination (ध्रम, अध्यास, आरोप), which were ascribed to three causes: (a) *Dosha*, दोष, defect of sense organ, as of the eye in jaundice, or of the skin in certain forms of leprosy (leading to tactile insensibility, *cf.* *Susruta*), or defect of necessary stimulus, *e.g.* too faint light, or undue distance or nearness, in vision; (b) *Samprayoga*, सम्प्रयोग, presentation of a part or an aspect instead of the whole; and (c) *Sanskāra*, संस्कार, the disturbing influence of mental predisposition, *e.g.* expectation, memory, habit, prejudice, etc.

The Doctrine of Inference.—*Anumāna* (Inference) is the process of ascertaining, not by perception or direct observation, but through the instrumentality or medium of a mark, that a thing possesses a certain character. Inference is therefore based on the establishment of an invariable concomitance (*Vyāpti*, व्याप्ति) between the mark and the character inferred. The Hindu Inference (*Anumāna*) is therefore neither merely formal nor merely material, but a combined Formal-

Material Deductive-Inductive process. It is neither the Aristotelian Syllogism (Formal-Deductive process), nor Mill's Induction (Material-Inductive process), but the real Inference which must combine formal validity with material truth, inductive generalisation with deductive particularisation.

An inference admits of a rigorous formal statement—in the shape of five propositions for dialectical purposes (*i.e.* in demonstrating to others)—or of three propositions when the inference is for oneself (स्वार्थानुमान):—

(1) The probandum, the statement of the proposition to be established (प्रतिज्ञा, साम्यनिर्देश), *e.g.* yonder mountain is "fiery"; (2) the reason, the ascription of the mark (हेतु, लिङ्गव्यपदेश), *e.g.* for it smokes; (3) the general proposition, stating the invariable concomitance which is the ground of the inference—clenched by an example, *e.g.* whatever smokes is "fiery," as an oven (उदाहरण); (4) next, the application, the ascertainment of the existence of the mark in the present case (उपनय), *e.g.* yonder mountain smokes; (5) finally, the conclusion, the probandum proved (निगमन), *e.g.* yonder mountain is "fiery."

1. Yonder mountain is "fiery."
2. For it smokes.
3. Whatever smokes is "fiery," as an oven.
4. Yonder mountain does smoke.
5. Therefore yonder mountain is "fiery."

For inference for oneself only the first three or the last three propositions are held to be sufficient.

The Hindu Anumāna, it will be seen, anticipates J. S. Mill's analysis of the syllogism as a material inference, but is more comprehensive; for the Hindu Udāharana, the third or general proposition with an example, combines and harmonises Mill's view of the major premise as a brief memorandum of like instances already observed, fortified by a recommendation to extend its application to unobserved cases, with the Aristotelian view of it as a universal proposition which is the formal ground of the inference. This Formal-Material Deductive-Inductive process thus turns on one thing—the establishment of the invariable concomitance (व्याप्ति) between the mark and the character inferred—in other words, an inductive generalisation. The question is—what is our warrant for taking the leap from the observed to unobserved cases? Under what conditions are we justified to assert a Universal Real proposition on the basis of our necessarily limited observation?

The Chārvāka View.—Among the Chārvākas there were two classes, the cruder school of materialists who accepted perception (प्रत्यक्ष) as a valid source of knowledge, as well as the reality of natural law (सम्भाव), and the finer school of sceptics, who impugned all kinds of knowledge, immediate as well as mediate, and all evidence, Perception as well as Inference; vide Jayanta's reference in the Nyāyamañjarī to मुद्राक्षितवादीनाः; also चार्वाकपूत्रैस्तु ज्ञातस्तत्त्वं व्याख्यात इति प्रतिज्ञाय प्रमाणप्रत्यक्षसंख्यालक्षणनियमाज्ञात्प्रकरणोपपत्त्यनेव व्याख्यातवान्—Āhnika 1, Mañjarī.

The Chārvākas hold that the principle of causality

which the Buddhists assume to be a ground of an induction (व्याप्ति), is itself an induction (a case of Vyāpti), which amounts to reasoning in a circle (चक्रवर्ति); that every inference is based on an unconditional invariable concomitance, which itself must be inferred, as universal propositions cannot be established by our limited perceptions, and thus there is a *regressus ad infinitum* (अनादिपरम्परा), and that the *nexus* between cause and effect, or between the sign and the thing signified (e.g. smoke and fire), is only a mental step or subjective association based on former perception, a mental step which by accident is found justified by the result in a number of cases.

The Buddhists: their Analysis and Vindication of Inference.—The Buddhists, however, take their stand on the principle of the Uniformity of Nature (प्रतिबन्ध, स्वभावप्रतिबन्ध, Nyāya-Vindu). This uniformity, for scientific purposes, has to be divided into two different relations: (1) the uniformity of succession in the relation of cause and effect, e.g. of smoke to fire (कारणभाव, तदुत्पत्ति, Nyāya-Vindu); (2) the uniformity of co-existence (in the form of co-inherence in the same substrate) in the relation of genus and species, e.g. the relation of invariable concomitance expressed in the proposition "all Sinsapās are trees," which is not a relation of causality, but of co-existence or co-inherence in the same substrate (i.e. the co-inherence of the generic qualities of a tree with the specific characters of a Sisu-tree in this particular individual before me, a Sisu-tree), a relation which may be termed essential identity (तदात्म्य, स्वभाव—Nyāya-Vindu). To

these two the Buddhists add a third ground of inference, non-perception of the perceptible (अनुपलब्धि, दृश्यानुपलब्धि), which is employed in inferring the absence (प्रतिषेध) of a thing from the non-perception of the thing or of something else. In all cases of inference based on the Uniformity of Nature, the relation is that of inseparableness or non-disjunction between the mark and the character inferred. The question is: how is this inseparableness (अविनाभाव) ascertained, and what is the warrant of our belief in it in these cases?

Ascertainment of Inseparableness or Non-disjunction: Buddhist Account.—First take the case of causation. The cause is the invariable antecedent of the effect. What is meant is that (a) a specific cause (or sum of causal conditions) is invariably followed by a specific effect, and (b) a specific effect (with all the distinctive and relevant accompaniments, कार्यविशेष) is invariably preceded by a specific cause (कारणविशेष). It is not that clouds always lead to rain, or that floods in the river-valley always imply rain in the hills higher up. But this particular conjunction of antecedent circumstances (e.g. the appearance of a particular kind of clouds accompanied by flashes of lightning, the roll of thunder and flights of Valákás—driven by the wind from a particular quarter of the horizon, and ascending in black masses, etc.) is as a rule the precursor of a particular assemblage of rain effects (rain with particular accompaniments). Again, this particular kind of flood (overflowing of the river-banks accompanied by muddy discoloration of the water, rapid currents, the bearing

down of tree-trunks, etc.) is always preceded by rain in the hills higher up (though, no doubt, other cases of floods in a river may be due to a breach in an embankment or the melting of the snows). In other words, the Buddhists (and the earlier Nyāya schools) avoid the difficulty arising from the plurality of causes by taking into consideration the accompanying phenomena, which, if properly marked, would always point to a specific cause of a specific effect, and *vice versa*.

I quote Nyāya authorities, but this device to obviate the plurality of causes is common to the early Nyāya and the Buddhistic systems.

पृथैवत् । यत्र कारणेन कार्यमनुमान्यते । उदाहरणम्—

मेघोद्यत्या भविष्यति वृष्टिरिति कारणेन कार्यमनुमानम् । कर्षं पुनरस्य प्रयोगः । वृष्टिमत्तः स्ते मेघाः गम्भीरध्वनिपक्षे सति बहुबलाकावक्षे सति चचिरप्रभावक्षे सति उन्नतिमत्त्वात् वृष्टिमन्नेषवत् ।

शेषवत् (यत्र कार्येन कारणमनुमान्यते)—उदाहरणम्—

उपरिवृष्टिमहेऽज्ञातम्वन्धि नदीस्रोतः शीघ्रत्वे सति पूर्वैकलकाशादिवहनपक्षे सति पूर्वैकत्वात् पूर्वैवृष्टिमच्चदोषदिति । (Udyotakara, Chap. I., Āhnika 1, Sūtra 5.) Vāchaspati puts this clearly :—
यद्यपि कारणमात्रं व्यभिचरति कार्योत्पादं तथापि यादृशं न व्यभिचरति तत्र निपुणेन प्रतिपत्ता भवितव्यम् । अन्यथा धूममात्रमपि वह्निमत्रं व्यभिचरतीति न धूमविशेषो गमको भवेत् । In other words, a single condition called a cause is not invariably succeeded by the effect, nor does the effect-phenomenon in general point to any particular cause as antecedent, for there may be a plurality of causes of a general effect. The skilful observer will therefore select the full complement of causal conditions which is invariably succeeded by the effect, and also the specific effect (e.g. धूमविशेष) which points to a specific causal antecedent. Compare also

Jayanta : " We infer an effect from a specific assemblage of causes " — न च कारणमात्रस्य हेतुत्वं ब्रूमो येनास्य व्यभिचारः स्यात् । अपि च विशिष्टमेव कारणं हेतुः । न च कारणविशेषो दुरवगमः । गम्भीर-
माच्चैतारम्भनिर्भिन्नगिरिगङ्गाराः रोलम्बगण्डलालतमालमलिनस्त्रियः . . . वृष्टि-
व्यभिचारकोह नैव प्रायः पयोमुखः । अनभ्युपगमे चैवमनुमानस्य जीवितम् ।
न स्याद्भूतविशेषाणामपि योद्धुमशक्तिः । Similarly, we infer a
specific cause from a specific assemblage of effects :—
शेषवदिति यत्र काव्येण कारणमनुमीयते यथा नदीपूरेण उपरितने देशे
वृष्टिरिति । वृष्टिमत्पुष्टदेशसंनृष्टा ईषं नदी फेनिलकलुषत्वादिविशिष्टपूरो-
पेतत्वात् । यत्तु सत्तुभङ्गहिमविलयनादिनापि नदीपूरोपपत्तिं दृष्ट्वा इति तत्रापि
उच्यते —

प्रमातुरपरार्थोऽयं विशेषो यो न पश्यति ।

नानुमानस्य दोषोऽस्ति प्रमेयाव्यभिचारिणः ॥

(Nyāyamañjarī, Āhnika 2, on Gotama Sūtra 5, Āhnika 1, Chap. I.)

A specific assemblage of causes, therefore, has only one specific assemblage of effects, and *vice versa*. Of course, the observer is to find out the essential or relevant features (as distinguished from the irrelevant ones) which, being included, will enable him to specify the particular cause of the particular effect.

Now, this being premised to be the exact meaning of the inseparableness or non-disjunction in the case of cause and effect, we come to the question with which we started—how is this relation to be ascertained or established between two phenomena or assemblages of phenomena? Obviously, mere observation of their agreement in presence (अन्वय) and their agreement in absence (व्यतिरेक) is no help in the matter. Take a concrete example. The ass is customarily employed to bring the fuel with which fire is lighted. In a hundred

cases you have observed the ass among the antecedents of smoke. In a hundred cases you may have observed that when there is no ass there is no smoke. This is no warrant for concluding a relation of cause and effect between an ass and smoke. It may be that you happen to have never observed smoke without an antecedent ass, or an ass without smoke following. Even this is of no avail. It is not agreement (unbroken and uniform though it be) in presence or in absence, or in both, that can settle the matter. There is one and only one way of ascertaining the causal relation. Suppose *A* with certain accompaniments is found to precede *B* immediately. Now, if *A* disappearing *B* disappears, even though all other antecedents remain and there is no other change in the case, then and then only can the causal relation be ascertained. It is not a mere table of positive instances or negative instances (अदर्शनाच्च न दर्शनात्); it is this Method, which we may term the Method of Subtraction (the Method of Difference in its negative aspect), that is the only exact and rigorous scientific Method. Such was the statement of the earlier Buddhists (*cf.* Udyotakara's and Vāchaspati's report of the Buddhist doctrine of Inference—स हि प्रतिबन्धो न दर्शनमात्रावनेयः).

तस्मात् तादात्म्यतदुत्पत्तिनिबन्धनः एव प्रतिबन्धः । यदाह कार्यकारण-
भावाद्वा स्वभावाद्वा नियामकात् । अविनाभावनियमोऽदर्शनाच्च न दर्शनात्
—a Buddhist Kārikā quoted in Vāchaspati, Udayana.
Śrīharsha, Mādhava, etc.—कार्यकारणभावश्च इदम्—अस्मिन् सति
भवति—सतसु अपि तदन्वेषु अस्मिन्नसति न भवति—एवमाकारः । न
अन्यथ्यतिरेकाभ्यामतिरिच्यते । . . . (एवं तादात्म्यमपि विपर्यये बाधक-
प्रमाणोपपत्त्या निश्चेतव्यम् । . . . तस्मात् तादात्म्यतदुत्पत्तिभ्यामेव प्रतिबन्धो

नामः ।—Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatikā, Chap. I, Āhnika 1, Sūtra 5, अनुमानलक्षणम्—आग्निग्रहोपायः)

But the canon in this form is not sufficiently safeguarded against possible abuse. Two points have to be emphasised : (1) It must be carefully observed that no other condition is changed, (2) that the appearance and disappearance of *A* must immediately precede the appearance and disappearance of *B*. The definition of a cause is based on two fundamental characters : (1) the unconditional invariableness of the antecedence, and (2) the immediateness of the antecedence. The canon of the Method of Difference must therefore be stated in such a form as to emphasise each of these aspects. And one main difficulty in the practical application of the canon is that, along with the introduction or sublation of an antecedent, some other phenomenon may be introduced or sublated unobserved. As a safeguard against this radical vitiation of the Method, the later Buddhists formulated the canon of a modified Method, termed the Pañchakārāṇī, a Joint Method of Difference, which combines the positive and the negative Methods of Difference (the Method of Addition and the Method of Subtraction) in a series of five steps, and which equally emphasises the unconditionality and the immediateness of the antecedence as essential moments of the causal relation. This is neither agreement in presence nor agreement in presence as well as absence (the foundation of J. S. Mill's Joint Method of Agreement), but the Joint Method of Difference. The Pañchakārāṇī runs thus :—

The following changes being observed, everything

else remaining constant, the relation of cause and effect is rigorously established :—

First step—The “cause” and the “effect” phenomena are both unperceived.

Second step—Then the “cause” phenomenon is perceived.

Third step—Then, in immediate succession, the “effect” phenomenon is perceived.

Fourth step—Then the “cause” phenomenon is sublated or disappears.

Fifth step—Then, in immediate succession, the “effect” phenomenon disappears.

Throughout, of course, it is assumed that the other circumstances remain the same (at least the relevant or material circumstances).

This Pañchakārāṇī, the Joint Method of Difference, has some advantages over J. S. Mill's Method of Difference, or, what is identical therewith, the earlier Buddhist Method ; and the form of the canon, bringing out in prominent relief the unconditionality and the immediateness of the antecedence, is as superior from a theoretical point of view to J. S. Mill's canon, and is as much more consonant than the latter to the practice of every experimenter, as the Hindu analysis of Anumāna as a Formal-Material Deductive-Inductive Inference is more comprehensive and more scientific than Aristotle's or Mill's analysis of the Syllogism (or Mediate Inference).

But even the Pañchakārāṇī is no sufficient answer to the question with which we started. The Pañchakārāṇī

is only a method ; it shows only how in a particular case the relation of cause and effect is to be established (प्रतिबन्धग्रहोपाय). But we want more than this—we require a warrant for the process. The Buddhists therefore supply the following proof of the Method : Doubt is legitimate, but there is a limit to doubt. When doubt lands you in an unsettlement of a fundamental ground of practice, and would thus annul all practical exercise of the will, the doubt must cease ; else the doubt would be suicidal or sophistical. In this particular case, when the Pañchakāraṇī is satisfied, the antecedent in question must be the cause, for there is no other antecedent to serve as cause ; the proof is indirect but rigid. If this be not the cause, there is no cause of the phenomenon. It was not, and it begins to be, without a cause ; which would be a contradiction of the rational ground of all practice, for all volitional activity proceeds by implication on the principle of causality. If things could happen without a cause, all our motives to action would be baffled. The link between a presentation and the instinctive volitional reaction would snap, and the circuit of consciousness would be left incomplete. In fact, the Buddhists go farther ; they hold causal efficiency (कारणक्रिया) to be of the essence of empirical (relative) Reality. The proof of the Joint Method of Difference, then, lies in a strict application of the principle of causality in its negative form (viz., there can be no phenomenon without a cause), and the truth of this last is guaranteed by the same ultimate criterion of empirical (relative) Reality as the truth of Perception itself, viz. the

correspondence between the rational and the practical activity of the self.

But invariable concomitance (or non-disjunction), the Buddhists argue, has another form, *e.g.* the relation of the genus to the species. We may have perceived a hundred instances of the association of certain characters with certain others; we may also have never perceived the former when the latter were absent; but this would not enable us to generalise and establish invariable and unconditional co-existence. We must be first satisfied that there is identity of essence (तादात्म्य, स्वभाव). It is only when we perceive that the characters of a *Sinsapá* are co-inherent with the generic characters of a tree in the same individual object (a *Sinsapá*-tree before me), and when we further perceive that the characters are held together by the relation of identity of essence, that we can say that all *Sinsapás* are trees. For as there is identity of essence, a *Sinsapá* would not be a *Sinsapá* if it were not a tree; it would lose its self-identity, which is a contradiction. Hence the relation of identity of essence (तादात्म्य, स्वभाव), as in the relation of the species to the genus, is the sole ground for establishing uniformity of co-existence (प्रतिपत्त्य, स्वभावप्रतिपत्त्य).

For the Buddhist Method of Induction in its later form, the *Pañchakāraṇī*, *vide* *Sarvadarśana Saṅgrahā*—Buddhist reply to the *Chárváka* attack on Inference:—

यदन्वयायि अविनाभावो दुर्बोध इति तदसाधीयः । तादात्म्यतदुत्पत्तिभ्याम-
विनाभावस्य सुज्ञानत्वात् । तदुक्ते—कार्यकारणभावात् वा स्वभावात् वा
नियामकात् । अविनाभावनिमित्तमोद्देशेनात्र न दर्शेनात् । As for the
Nyāya view, अन्यव्याप्तिरेकी अविनाभावनिश्चायकी इति ।—the

Buddhist objects : ननु पक्षे साध्यसाधनयोरव्यभिचारो दुरवधारणः भवेत् । भूते, भविष्यति, वज्रैराने अनुपलभ्यमाने च व्यभिचारशङ्काया अनिवारणात् ।—the Nyāya retorts : ननु तद्याविषयस्थले तावकेऽपि नते व्यभिचारशङ्का दुष्परिहरा दात ।—the Buddhist answers : मैवं बोधः, विनापि कारणं कार्यमुत्पद्यताम् इत्येवं विधायाः शङ्कायाः व्याघातावधिकृतया निवृत्तत्वात् । तदेव हि आशङ्क्येत यस्मिन्वाशङ्क्यमाने व्याघातादयः नापत्तरेषुः । तदुक्ते व्याघातावधिराशङ्का इति । तस्मात् तदुत्पत्तिनिश्चयेन अविनाभावो निश्चीयते । तदुत्पत्तिनिश्चयश्च कार्यहेतोः प्रत्यक्षोपलम्भानुपलम्भ-पञ्चकनिवन्धनः । कार्यस्य उत्पत्तेः प्रागनुपलम्भः, कारणोपलम्भे सति उपलम्भः, उपलम्भस्य पश्चात् कारणानुपलम्भात् अनुपलम्भः इति पञ्चकारस्या धूम-धूमध्व-जयो कार्यकारणभावः निश्चीयते । तथा तादात्म्यनिश्चयेन अपि अविनाभावः निश्चीयते । यदि शिक्षायाः वृक्षत्वम् सतिपतेत् स्वात्मानमेव जघात् इति विषये वाचकप्रवृत्तेः । अप्रवृत्ते तु वाचके भूयः सहभावोपलम्भेऽपि व्यभिचारशङ्कायाः को निवारयिता । शिक्षाप्राप्त्यर्थोऽपि तादात्म्यनिश्चयः वृक्षोऽयं शिक्षया इति सामानाधिकरस्यवलात् उपपद्यते तस्मात् कार्यस्वात्मानो कारणम् स्वात्मानम् अनुमापयत इति सिद्धम् । Sarvadarśana Saṅgrahā, Bauddha-Darśanam ; vide also Śrīdhara, Kandali.

The Nyāya Doctrine of Inference.—The Nyāya easily demolishes the Buddhist contention about identity of essence. The Nyāya writers, being realists, do not impugn the reality of the genus (जाति) like the nominalists or the nominalistic conceptualists ; but they point out that the inseparableness (or non-disjunction) in such cases can only be established by the experience of unbroken uniformity (अव्यभिचारित्व, i.e. by अव्यवस्थितिरैक्य, दर्शनादर्शने). Uniform agreement in presence with uniform agreement in absence—not the mysterious identity of essence irresistibly perceived in any individual case or cases—is the only basis for constituting genera and species in natural classification. Indeed, some of the later Nyāya writers point out that individuals do not

always possess in nature all the characters that go to form the definition of the class to which they are referred.

Similarly, as regards the relation of cause and effect, a *nexus* is sometimes fancied to be perceived, a power in the cause to produce the effect (शक्ति), or an ultimate form (जातिनीह्वय), which is supposed to be present whenever the effect (quality or substance) is produced (*cf.* Bacon's view of the "Forms" of Simple Qualities). All this is neither a matter of observation nor of legitimate hypothesis. There is nothing except the invariable time-relation (antecedence and sequence) between the cause and the effect. But the mere invariableness of an antecedent does not suffice to constitute it the cause of what succeeds; it must be an unconditional antecedent as well (अन्यथानिर्दिष्टान्यस्य नियतपूर्ववर्तिता, being the definition of कार्यकारणभाव). For example, the essential or adventitious accompaniments of an invariable antecedent may also be invariable antecedents; but they are not unconditional, but only collateral and indirect. In other words, their antecedence is conditional on something else (न स्वातन्त्र्येण). The potter's stick is an unconditional invariable antecedent of the jar; but the colour of a stick, or its texture or size or any other accompaniment or accident which does not contribute to the work done (so far as we are considering it), is not an unconditional antecedent, and must not therefore be regarded as a cause. Similarly, the co-effects of the invariable antecedents, or what enters into the production of these co-effects, may themselves be invariable antecedents; but they

are not unconditional, being themselves conditioned by those of the antecedents of which they are effects. For example, the sound produced by the stick or by the potter's wheel invariably precedes the jar, but it is a co-effect, and *Ākāśa* (ether) as the substrate and *Vayu* (air) as the vehicle of the sound enter into the production of this co-effect; but these are not "unconditional" antecedents, and must therefore be rejected in an enumeration of conditions or causes of the jar. Again, the conditions of the conditions, the invariable antecedents of the invariable antecedents, are not unconditional. The potter's father is an invariable antecedent of the potter who is an invariable antecedent of the jar, but the potter's father does not stand in a causal relation to the potter's handiwork. In fact, the antecedence must not only be unconditionally invariable, but must also be immediate (अव्यवहितपूर्वकालावच्छेदेन कार्यदेशे सत्त्वं). Finally, all seemingly invariable antecedents which may be dispensed with or left out are *ipso facto* not unconditional, and cannot therefore be regarded as causal conditions. In short, nothing that is unnecessary is unconditional. For this class, *vide* Visvanātha:—नियतावश्यकपूर्वभाविनः अवश्यकृमनियतपूर्ववर्तिन एव कार्यसम्भवे । तद्वन्न (चतुरिक्तं) अन्यथासिद्धं—Visvanātha, Siddhānta-Muktāvali, on Śloka 20. For example, it is the custom to point to spatial position or direction with the fingers; but finger-pointing, though invariably present, is not causally related to the perception of direction or spatial position, because we can imagine such perception without finger-pointing (अन्यथासिद्धतया अङ्गुल्या निर्देशस्य दिक्प्रत्यक्षत्वेन न स्वाभाविकः सम्बन्धः, Vāchaspatī, Tātparyyatīkā, Chap. I.,

Āhnika 1, Sūtra 5. This shows that the doctrine of *अन्यथासिद्धिज्ञान्य* was long anterior to Gaṅgeśa).

[Visvanātha in the *Bhāṣa-Parichehḥeda* mentions five kinds of *अन्यथासिद्ध*, conditional antecedents—(1) येन सहपूर्वभावः ; (2) यस्य वा कारणमादाय (पूर्वभावः) ; (3) अन्यप्रति पूर्वभावे ज्ञाते यत्पूर्वभावविज्ञानम् ; (4) जनकं प्रति पूर्ववर्जिताम् अपरिज्ञाय यस्य (पूर्ववर्जिता) न गृह्यते ; and (5) अद्यापि यत् निर्यतावश्यकपूर्वभाविनः अतिरिक्तम् भवेत् (एतेषु पञ्चसु आवश्यकत्वसौ—Ślokas 19 and 20), यस्य स्वातन्त्र्येण अन्यव्यतिरेकी न सः किन्तु स्वकारणमादायैव अन्यव्यतिरेकी गृह्यते तदन्यथासिद्धम्—*Siddhānta-Muktāvali*, *loc. cit.*—The *Dinakarī* points out that the first two cases are comprehended under the formula इतरान्वयव्यतिरेकप्रमुक्तान्वयव्यतिरेक-ज्ञातित्वम् । There are several classifications of these irrelevant antecedents (*अन्यथासिद्ध*) ; I quote one of the best known.]

The unconditional (*अन्यथासिद्धिज्ञान्य*), as interpreted in this comprehensive sense, is a far more fruitful conception than Mill's, and is well adapted to its work—the elimination of the irrelevant factors in the situation. In the end, the discrimination of what is necessary to complete the sum of causes from what is dependent, collateral, secondary, superfluous, or inert (*i.e.* of the relevant from the irrelevant factors), must depend on the test of expenditure of energy. This test the *Nyāya* would accept only in the sense of an operation analysable into molar or molecular motion (*परिस्पन्द एव भौतिको व्यापारः करोत्यर्थः—चतुर्द्विषसु व्यापारो नास्ति—Jayanta, Mañjarī, Āhnika 1*), but would emphatically reject if it is advanced in support of the notion of a mysterious causal power or efficiency (*शक्ति*). With the *Nyāya* all energy is necessarily kinetic. This is a peculiarity of

the Nyāya—its insisting that the effect is only the sum or resultant of the operations of the different causal conditions—that these operations are kinetic, being of the nature of motion, in other words, holding firmly to the view that causation is a case of expenditure of energy, *i.e.* a re-distribution of motion, but at the same time absolutely repudiating the Sāṅkhya conception of power or productive efficiency as metaphysical or transcendental (चतुर्द्वय), and finding nothing in the cause other than an unconditional invariable complement of operative conditions (कारणसामग्री), and nothing in the effect other than the consequent phenomenon which results from the joint operations of the antecedent conditions. (समुदितसकलकारकनिकरपरिस्पन्द एव—Jayanta. सामग्री कार्ये—सामग्रीकार्येते तु कार्यमसु किमन्तरालवर्तिन्या शक्त्या—Jayanta, *ibid.*, Āhnika 1, शक्तिनिराकरणम् । It may be noted that the Nyāya, while repudiating transcendental power (Śakti) in the mechanism of Nature and natural causation, does not deny the existence of metaphysical conditions like merit (धर्मे), which constitute a system of moral ends that fulfil themselves in and through the mechanical system and order of Nature—*vide* Jayanta, चतुर्द्वये किमपि कारणो कल्पितमेव धर्मोदि—Āhnika 1, शक्तिनिराकरणम् ।)

The causal relation, then, like the relation of genus to species, is a natural relation of concomitance (व्याप्तिः स्वाभाविकः सम्बन्धः—Vāchaspati) which can be ascertained only by the uniform and uninterrupted experience of agreement in presence and agreement in absence, and not by deduction from a certain *a priori* principle like that of Causality or Identity of Essence.

Nyāya objection to the Buddhist Method of Difference as a means of ascertaining Causality.—Take for example the Buddhist deduction of Causality in any particular conjunction by means of the negative Method of Difference, or of the Pañchakāraṇī. The ascertainment of the causal relation by these Methods is open to the following objections: (1) The unconditionality of the antecedent cannot possibly be ascertained. As the Chārvāka rightly points out, the Methods enable you to eliminate irrelevant antecedents that are or can be perceived; but the introduction or sublation of latent or undetected antecedents can be imagined, against which the Method of Difference is powerless. In the case of the production of smoke, for example, by fire—what if I say that an invisible demon intervenes in every case between the fire and the smoke, that this demon (विश्वनाथ) is the immediate antecedent and real cause of the latter, and that the fire is an accident which in every such case is brought about by its own causal antecedents? In saying this I do not go counter to the principle of causality, and am landed in no contradiction (व्याघात) such as strikes at the very roots of all practice, or baffles the completed circuit of consciousness, however much I may violate probability.

(2) In the second place, even supposing that the fire in this particular case (which satisfies the Method of Difference rigidly) is ascertained to be the cause of the smoke, how can I know that fire is the cause in other cases, or that there is no other cause? You will perhaps argue that if there were an *indefinite* number of causes of the same specific phenomenal effect, it would

violate the principle that phenomena are all conditioned, *i.e.* exist only under certain conditions (कादाचित्कत्व), which is more comprehensive than the principle of causality, and the contradiction of which equally overthrows all rational practical activity. Yes, I accept the conditionality of phenomena, but this is not violated by supposing that one specific assemblage of phenomena has more than one cause. It is true that if you suppose such plurality of causes you cannot establish the invariableness of the particular conjunction (green-wood fire and smoke) which your Method of Difference fixes upon as a case of cause and effect; in other words, with your special principle of Causality so restricted, and without any general principle of Uniformity of Nature to fall back upon, you cannot ascertain from the present case, or from any number of similar cases that you may have observed, that *all* green-wood fires are followed by smoke, or that in a given case smoke has been preceded by fire—*i.e.*, you are helpless in demonstrating (or ascertaining indubitably) the relation of cause and effect. But this is an objection against your own position, not mine. Why not admit at once that certain phenomena are naturally connected (as invariable concomitants or antecedents) with other phenomena, and take your stand on observed concomitance (uniform and uninterrupted experience of agreement in presence as well as absence) without assuming causality as an *a priori* principle and making deductions therefrom, and without the trouble of ascertaining the relation of cause and effect in every individual case? I am free to admit that theoretical objections of irresistible force

(like those of the Chárváka sceptics) can be urged against this ascertainment of universal invariable and unconditional concomitance (अनिवर्त्यहोपाय) on the basis of mere observation. Doubts of this kind can no more be laid by my view of the matter than by your canons of causality and essential identity (तदुत्पत्ति and तादात्म्य). Ultimately we all have to fall back on the rational practice of thinking persons (प्रेक्षावन्तः), and such persons are always content to act on practical certitude instead of hankering after an unattainable apodictic certainty in the affairs of life (प्रामाणिकलोकपात्रामनुपालयता यथादर्शने शङ्कनोद्यम्). This same practical certitude is also the ultimate warrant of the Deductive-Inductive Inference by which we ascertain the characters of things without direct perception and through the medium or instrumentality of a mark.

[To the earlier Buddhist canon of the Method of Subtraction, *i.e.* the negative Method of Difference, Udyotakara and Váchaspati, of the Nyáya school, pertinently and acutely object as follows :—

सर्वे यत् किञ्चित् क्वचित् दृष्टे तस्य यत्र प्रतिबन्धः, तद्विदः तस्य तत् गमकं तत्र इति अनुमानौः । स एव तु प्रतिबन्धो न तावत् तदुत्पत्त्या सम्भवति । का पुनरिषे तदुत्पत्तिः । धूमस्य किं बह्वनन्तरं भावः । स तादृशः अस्ति रासभस्यापि । तत्प्रतिबन्धोऽपि धूमः स्यात् । अथ तदनन्तरमेव भावः, न च रासभानन्तरं भवत्यपि तदनन्तरमेव भवति, तस्मिन् सति अपि असति अग्नौ तदभावात् । असति अपि तस्मिन् सत्यादेन्यनवति बह्वी तदभावात् । अथ यद्यपि धूमस्य बहिर्भावानुविधानं तत्रोपलभे, तथापि देशान्तरादिषु तदभावोभ्यस्तुतस्तः । तथा हि भूयो भूयो रासभे दृष्टे धूमोदृष्टः, तदभावे च अदृष्टः, न स तत्कार्यः । तज्ज्ञातोयस्यैव धूमस्य रासभे विना सति बह्वी भावात्, एवं सप्तपि अग्नौ पिशाचेन जनितो धूमः, क्वचिद्देशादौ तज्ज्ञातोय एव रासभवद्वह्वभावेऽपि पिशाचादेव भविष्यति, इति अवश्यं शङ्कया भार्यं नियामकं अयम्यतान् । न च

सति भावमात्रे निदानकं, तस्य रासभादिषु अविशेषात् । तदनन्तरमेव इति च अवधारणस्य शङ्कायामभावात् । अवधारणेन तु शङ्कापनयने परस्परश्रयप्रसङ्गात् ।

Buddhist reply :—स्यादेतत् । यो यो धूमोद्दृष्टः स सङ्गैल्लावत् आदेन्धनसहितं वरूपनन्तरमेव, न पिशाचानन्तरं । स च कादाचित्कतया निमित्तमपेक्षमाणो यदनन्तरमेव गम्यते तदेव अग्रतीतव्यभिचारं निमित्तं करोति, न तु प्रतीतव्यभिचारं रासभादि । नापि सङ्गैषानुपलम्बपिशाचादिः । यदि न तद्विनिर्गमं कस्मात् विनाशपि वह्निं क्वचित् धूमो न उपलभ्यते । अथ असी (पिशाचः) सङ्गैषा वह्निसहितः तथा सति आदेन्धनवत् कथं वह्निरपि न कारणं । कारणं चेत् कथं तदनन्तरेण धूमभावशङ्का । Now the phenomenon that is contingent (कादाचित्क) cannot be uncaused—अकारणस्य हि कार्यस्य निर्गमं सर्वं असङ्गं वा स्यात्, अनपेक्षत्वात् न कादाचित्कत्वम् । And with the limitation of a specific effect, there must be only one specific cause, for an unrestricted plurality of causes would amount to the denial of uniformity in causality (i.e. of the unconditional invariable antecedence)—

नापि अनेकं कारणं, अकारणत्वप्रसङ्गादेव । वह्न्यनन्तरमेव भाव इति हि धूमस्य वह्निकार्यत्वम् । स चेत् अपहरेरपि अनन्तरं, न एवकारार्थः स्यात्, इति न वह्नेः कार्यम् । एवम् अन्यस्यापि न कार्यम् । न हि अन्यानन्तरमेव भवति, वह्नेरपि अनन्तरं भावात्, तत्रैव अहेतुको धूमः स्यात् । तथा च कादाचित्कत्व-व्याहतिः ।

Nyāya rejoinder :—सत्यम् । यद्यपि विना वह्निं नोपलब्धो धूमः, यद्यपि च पिशाचानन्तरं नोपलभ्यते तेषामनुपलब्धेः, तथापि पिशाचकार्यं एव धूमः । तत्र तत्र वह्निः कुतश्चित् स्वहेतोः उपनिपतितः, रासभ इव, न धूमस्य जनकः । तेन तदभावेऽपि तज्ज्ञातीय एव कारणभेदजन्मा कदाचित्, कादाचित्को धूमः स्यात् । इति अनिवृत्तिरेव शङ्कायाः । न च दृष्टसम्भवे नादृष्टं कस्यपितुं युक्तम् इति शक्यं भवद्विवेकुम् । अनुपलम्बितव्यवसायस्य अज्ञाननिरा-कारणत्वात् (vide Nyāya-Vindū) । न च अनुपलम्ब्यनराणि अपि तद्विषये प्रभवन्ति । तस्मात् अनन्तरमेव इति अवधारणाभावात् नैवं कार्यका-रणभावावधारणं युक्तम् । न च यदन्यसहितानन्तरं उपलब्धं तत्, तदन्यरहितान्तरं तस्मात् भवत् भिन्नजातीयं भवति । उक्तं हि रामभसहितान्तरं वह्नेः यादृशो धूमः

तादृश एव तदरहितान् पश्ये रिति । तस्मादेवंविधा शङ्कापिज्ञाची स्वनिवारकं तदुत्पत्तिनिश्चयमास्कन्दती न शक्या निवारयितुम् ।

The Nyāya proceeds to point out that what is contingent need not necessarily be produced by a cause. It is enough if there is natural connection with something else, a relation of antecedence and succession (or concomitance), without any element of productive efficiency or causation.

अपि चास्तु तदुत्पत्तिनिश्चयः तथापि कस्मात् कारणमन्तरेण न कार्यं भवति । तथा च सति अनपेक्षतया कादाचित्कत्वविहितः इति चेत् । अस्तु तर्हि सम्बन्धः स्वाभाविकतया अन्यानपेक्षः अप्यभिचारो गमकत्वाद्गमः । न च यो वा न वा भवतु । कृतं कार्यकारणभावावधारणायामेन । यथा चेत् तथा अग्रे दर्शयिष्यामः ।—Vāchaspatī, Tātparyyatīkā, Chap. I., Āhnika 1, Sūtra 5, व्याप्तिग्रहोपायविचारः ।]

The Nyāya Analysis of the Causal Relation continued: Co-effects.—In the enumeration of different varieties of irrelevant antecedents (अन्यथासिद्ध), we have already noticed that co-effects of the same cause are apt to be confounded as cause and effect. In some cases the co-effects may be simultaneous, e.g. the case of the ascending and the descending scale in a balance, which are co-effects of gravity (*vide* Pārtha-sārathi Mīśra on Kumārīlā, Śloka-Vārtika—तुलानमनोवमनयोस्तु न मिथः कार्यकारणत्वम्, उभयोरेककारणत्वात्,—Śloka 157, Śūnya-Vāda). In other cases the co-effects may be successive effects of the same cause, and here the risk is great of mistaking the antecedent co-effect to be the cause of the succeeding co-effect, e.g. the case of ants moving in a line to carry their eggs upward, which is observed before the summer rains, where the movement of ants and the rains are not cause and effect, but successive

effects of the same cause, viz. the heat (उष्मा), which disturbs the elements, viz. the earth and the atmosphere (महाभूतक्षोभ); the ants being affected by this heat earlier than the atmospheric movements which bring the clouds and the rain.

(Udyotakara and Vāchaspati: न च पिपीलिकादसञ्चरणं वर्षस्य कारणमनुपलब्धसामर्थ्यात् । अतएवपि तस्मिन् वर्षस्योत्पत्तेः । वर्षमूल-कारणस्य तु महाभूतक्षोभस्य पिपीलिकादसञ्चरणं पूर्वकार्यम् । द्रव्यमानाः सलु पिपीलिका भीमेनोष्णत्वा खानि जलानि भूमिष्ठानि उपरिष्ठात् नयन्ति—Tātparyyatīkā, II., 2, Sūtra 37.)

Synchronousness of Cause and Effect.—This is resolved into a case of simultaneous co-effects of the same ultimate cause, e.g. the ascent of one scale and the descent of the other in the balance, which are not related as cause and effect, but are simultaneous effects of gravity. In other cases the synchronousness is only apparent, the interval between the antecedent and the consequent being too small (मूलकाल) to be apprehended (योगपञ्चाभिमान), e.g. in the case of the needle piercing a hundred soft lotus-petals laid one upon another, where the steps are really successive; or the illumination of the whole room by the light of a lamp, where the succession is unperceived owing to the inconceivable velocity of light (cf. Kumārila, Śloka-Vārtika—हेतुहेतुमतां सिद्धं योगपञ्चनिर्देशनम्,—यत् प्रदीपप्रभाद्युक्तं, मूलकालोर्गन्त तत्र नः । दुर्लेखस्तु यथा वेधः पद्मपत्रश्रेते तथा । Śūnya-vāda, Śloka 156-157.—I quote Mimāṃsā authorities, but the view is common to the Mimāṃsā and the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika).

The Time-relation in a Chain of Causes and Effects.—A careful study of the time-relation in a chain of causes

and effects is a peculiarity of the Vaiseshika system (and the later Nyāya). A moment (ultimate unit of time, Kṣana, क्षण) is defined to be the time-interval between the completion of the sum of conditions and the appearance of the effect. The Vaiseshika conceives the unit to be determined by reference to the division of one atom from another (विभागानुत्पाद्यविभाग प्रागभाव-सम्पन्नकर्मोपचिन्नः कालः क्षणः—Śapta-Padārthī, Śivāditya—i.e. the ultimate unit of time is the time during which motion exists in an atom prior to its division from another atom, in a case of division due to motion). The Sāṅkhya, we have already seen, determines this ultimate unit by reference to the motion of a Tanmātra.

The number of such units will determine the time-interval between a given set of physical conditions and a particular effect, for between a so-called sum of causes and a so-called sum of effects there intervenes a series of atomic (or molecular) motions, with conjunctions and disjunctions which form the causal chain. However crude in the practical application, the fundamental idea is, in connection with the principle of work and energy (for which both the Sāṅkhya and the Nyāya-Vaiseshika furnish a rudimentary basis), immensely suggestive of a possible Time Calculus.

Plurality of Causes.—This will be discussed when we consider the relation of Vyāpti to the principle of Causality.

The Nyāya Ground of Inference.—Vyāpti निवृत्तसाहचर्यम्.—Inference, then, in the Nyāya, depends on the ascertainment, not of the causal relation, nor of

the relation of genus to species, but of a natural relation, between two phenomena, of invariable and unconditional concomitance (उपाधिविधुरः साधारिकः सम्बन्धः व्याप्तिः—Udyotakara and Vāchaspati). Of the two phenomena so connected, one is called the Vyāpya or Gamaka (the sign, mark, or indicator), and the other Vyāpaka or Gamyā (the thing signified, marked, or indicated). In the relation of fire and smoke, for example, smoke is the Vyāpya or Gamaka (sign or mark); and fire, the Vyāpaka or Gamyā (the thing signified or marked). Now the relation of Vyāpti between *A* and *B* may be either unequal or equipollent (विषमव्याप्ति or समव्याप्ति). When *A* is the sign of *B*, but *B* is not the sign of *A*, the Vyāpti is one-sided or unequal, and here a Vyāpti is said to exist between *A* and *B*, but not between *B* and *A*. For example, smoke is a sign of fire, but fire is not universally a sign of smoke. When, therefore, the relation of Vyāpti is an unequal one, as between smoke and fire, it is expressed in the proposition—Wherever the Vyāpya (sign or mark, *e.g.* smoke) exists, the Vyāpaka (the thing signified or marked, *e.g.* fire) also exists. From this it follows by necessary implication (a sort of अवयवव्याप्ति) that whenever the Vyāpaka (*e.g.* fire) is absent, the Vyāpya (*e.g.* smoke) is also absent (व्यापकाभावे व्याप्याभावः). Again, the Vyāpti may be a mutual or equipollent one, *i.e.* *A* and *B* may be signs of each other, *e.g.* green-wood fire and smoke. Here each in turn is Vyāpya and Vyāpaka, and this is expressed in the two propositions:—(1) Wherever there is smoke there is green-wood fire, and (2) wherever

there is green-wood fire there is smoke. By necessary implication it follows—(1) Where there is no green-wood fire there is no smoke; (2) where there is no smoke there is no green-wood fire. We have seen that a Vyápti exists between smoke and fire, for wherever there is smoke there is fire, but we cannot say that a Vyápti exists between fire and smoke, for we cannot say that wherever there is a fire there is smoke. The combustion of an iron ball (अयोगोलक), for example, is a case of fire without smoke. But it would be correct to say that a Vyápti exists between green-wood fire and smoke, as well as between smoke and green-wood fire. The question, therefore, is: what is the relation between fire and smoke? The relation between fire and smoke is a conditional relation; i.e. on condition that the fire is green-wood fire, it would be a sign of smoke. In other words, a Vyápti implies unconditional invariable concomitance, and the relation between fire and smoke is not therefore a Vyápti (natural unconditional concomitance), for fire requires a "condition," Upádhi, viz. green-wood, to be followed by smoke. Smoke, on the other hand, requires no "condition" to indicate fire. For the purposes of Inference, therefore, relations between phenomena may be considered as of two kinds: (1) Contingent conditional relations, holding good on the fulfilment of a certain condition or Upádhi, and (2) Vyápti, or unconditional invariable relation, between a mark and that which it marks, a relation without any Upádhi or determining condition (उपाधिविधुरः सम्बन्धः). It is this latter kind of relation that serves as the ground of inference. If we can ascertain

that a Vyápti exists between *A* and *B*, then *A* is a sign of *B*, and an inference of the presence of *B* from the presence of *A*, and of the absence of *A* from the absence of *B*, would be warranted. The question, therefore, is, how to ascertain the relation of Vyápti between two phenomena.

Ascertainment of Vyápti according to the early Nyāya (आनिरुहोपाय).—Briefly speaking, the observation of agreement in presence (अन्वय) as well as agreement in absence (अतिरेक) between two phenomena, with the non-observation of the contrary (अभिपारादशून्य), is the foundation of our knowledge of Vyápti (दर्शनादर्शने—Vāchaspati). This suggests a natural relation (स्वाभाविकसम्बन्ध—Vāchaspati) of invariable concomitance (नियतसाहचर्य—Vāchaspati) between the phenomena, which is fortified by our non-observation (अदर्शन) of the contrary (अभिपार). But this does not establish the unconditionality of the concomitance (उपाधिविधुरसम्बन्ध), which is essential to a Vyápti. We have therefore to examine the cases carefully to see if there is any determining condition (Upādhi—i.e. some hidden or undetected but really operative or indispensable accompaniment) which conditions the relation between the supposed sign or mark (Gamaka) and the supposed signate (thing signified, Gamya). Now let us consider what constitutes an Upādhi. It is a circumstance which always accompanies, and is always accompanied by, the supposed signate (the thing signified, Gamya), but does not invariably accompany the supposed sign or mark (Gamaka). If, therefore, in the set of positive instances where both the sign and

the signate are present, nothing else is constantly present, there can be no Upádhi. Or, again, if in the set of negative instances where both the sign and the signate are absent, no other material circumstance is constantly absent, there is no Upádhi. This follows from the very definition of an Upádhi. It is impracticable to fulfil these requirements rigorously. Still, every one of the accompanying circumstances (of course the likely ones) may be taken successively, and it may be shown that the concomitance continues even when the suspected Upádhi (अङ्कितोपाधि) is absent, and therefore it cannot be the Upádhi. And this is to be fortified by the observation of uniform and uninterrupted agreement in absence (Vyatireka) between the two concomitant phenomena. In this way, when we have disproved all suspected Upádhis, we conclude by establishing the Vyápti. It is true that we may still go on doubting; but doubt has a certain limit for the "experimenter" and the thinking person (परोक्षक, प्रेषापान्). When doubt overthrows the foundation of all rational practice (प्रानासिकलोकपात्रा), or leads to a stoppage or arrest of all practical activity (लोकव्यवहार), it stands *ipso facto* condemned, and must be abandoned (व्यापात्रावधिराशङ्क—Śrīharsha and Udayana; व्यापात्र is mentioned by Vāhaspati). Thus it is that Vyápti is ascertained. In this way we observe innumerable instances of Vyápti. Now, by means of repeated observations of this kind (भूयोदर्शन) we have established the principle of the Uniformity of Nature (सम्भावप्रतिबन्ध), and also of Causality; and these two principles thus ascertained may be made use of in their turn as the basis of an argumentation or

deduction (Tarka, Ūha, तर्क) to confirm a particular Vyāpti in a particular case. Tarka or Ūha, then, is the verification and vindication of particular inductions by the application of the general principles of Uniformity of Nature and of Causality, principles which are themselves based on repeated observation (भूयोदशेन) and the ascertainment of innumerable particular inductions of uniformity or causality (भूयोदशेननितसंस्कारमहितम् इन्द्रियमेव स्वाभाविकसम्बन्धग्राहि—Vāchaspati). Thus Tarka also helps in dispelling doubt (सन्देह). Śrīharsha, however, questions the validity of this verification—*cf.* the well-known couplet ending तर्कः शङ्कावधिः कुतः ।

It will be seen that the process of disproving all suspected Upādhis (उपाधिशङ्कानिरास), in the early Nyāya, answers exactly *as a process* to Mill's Method of Agreement. In fact, the disproof of a suspected Upādhi by pointing to instances of agreement in presence (सम्बन्ध), even in the absence of the Upādhi, fortified as this is by the instances of agreement in absence (व्यतिरेक), virtually amounts to Mill's Joint Method of Agreement. But the fundamental difference is this : Mill's Method of Agreement is formulated in view of the phenomena of causation (including co-effects, etc.), and, as usually enunciated, confessedly breaks down in dealing with cases of Uniformities of Co-existence unconnected with Causation ; the Nyāya Method, based on the disproof of suspected Upādhis, is a more daring and original attempt, and is far more comprehensive in scope, being applicable to all Uniformities of Co-existence and of Causation alike. And this the Nyāya successively accomplished by introducing the mark of unconditionality (उपाधिविधुरता)

into the relation of Vyápti (Concomitance), even as the same mark of unconditionality (अन्यथासिद्धिशून्यता) had been previously introduced into the definition of Causality (कार्यकारणभाव). The difference between the early Nyáya and the Buddhist systems may be briefly put thus:—The former relied on empirical induction based on uniform and uninterrupted agreement in Nature, and accordingly regarded the Method of Agreement as the fundamental Method of Scientific Induction, founding Inference on Vyápti, to which they subordinated Causality in the doctrine of Method; the latter assumed two *a priori* principles, viz. causality and identity of essence, deduced the canon of the Method of Difference by an indirect proof from the principle of Causality, and made this Method the foundation of all scientific Induction of Causality, just as they based all natural classification of genera and species on their *a priori* principle of Identity of Essence.

Texts from the early Nyáya:—

(a) Method of Agreement and the Joint Method without the device of the Upádhi:—

Cf. Jayanta on साहचर्ये—तस्मिन् सत्येव भवने न विना भवने ततः। अयमेवाविनाभावो नियमः सहचारिता। ‘तस्मिन् सत्येव,’ “only this remaining throughout,” while others change—implying the Method of Agreement. The set of positive instances, in which this antecedent alone is constant, must be supplemented by a set of negative instances (agreement in absence):—अतिरेकनिश्चयमन्तरेण प्रतिबन्धग्रहणानुपपत्तेः। नियमश्चायं उच्यते यत् तस्मिन् सति भवने ततो विना न भवने इति भूषोदशेनम्। तच्च तस्मिन् सति भवने इत्यवयवावपरिच्छेदात् अगृहीतो नियमः स्यात्। ततो

विना न भवन् इत्यस्य अर्थस्य अपरिच्छेदात् इति—Jayanta, *Āhnika* 2, अतिरेकव्याप्तिश्चयापश्यकत्वम् ।

(b) Doctrine of the Upādhi: unconditional concomitance distinguished from conditional:—

यो वा स वा अस्तु सम्बन्धः यस्य असौ स्वाभाविको नियतः स एव गमकः, गम्यश्च इतरः सम्बन्धोति युज्यते । तथा हि धूमादीनां वह्न्यादिसम्बन्धः स्वाभाविकः । नतु वह्न्यादीनां धूमादिभिः । उपलभ्यते ते हि विनापि धूमादिभिः । यदातु चार्देन्धनादिसम्बन्धम् अनुभवन्ति तदा धूमादिभिः सह संबध्यन्ते । तस्मात् वह्न्यादीनाम् चार्देन्धनाद्युपाधिकृतः सम्बन्धो न स्वाभाविकः । ततो न नियतः । स्वाभाविकस्तु धूमादीनां वह्न्यादिसम्बन्ध उपाधेः अनुपलभ्यमानात् क्लृप्तिः पश्मि-चारस्य चदर्शनात् अनुपलभ्यमानस्यापि कल्पनानुपपत्तेः । अतो नियतः सम्बन्धः अनुमानाद्गमः ।

(c) Concomitance sufficient without causal *nexus*:—

The Buddhist objects: In Nature everything is connected with everything else. Hence, if there were no *nexus* of causality between antecedent and consequent, everything might follow from everything else. The Nyāya replies: You admit uniformities (of co-existence, etc.) other than causal; so you confess that a natural fixed order can exist without the causal *nexus*....

(d) An Upādhi, how established and how disproved:—

The Nyāya then proceeds to show how an Upādhi is established, or how disproved by observation:—
तत्र यत्रैः अनार्देन्धनस्य विना धूमम् अयोगोलकादी दर्शनात् चार्देन्धनोपाधिः अस्य धूमेन सम्बन्धः न तु स्वाभाविक इति निश्चयते । धूमविशेषस्य तु विना यद्गन्धम् अनुपलभ्यात्, उपाधिभेदस्य च सदुपलभ्यमानस्य कल्पनायां प्रमाणाभावात्, विशेषणमपेक्षस्य च संशयस्य अनुपलभ्यपूर्वे अनुत्पादात्, उत्पादे च अति-प्रमत्तात् प्रेक्षावत् प्रवृत्त्युच्छेदात्, स्वाभाविकः सम्बन्धः अवधार्यते ।

(e) General Method of Induction by exhaustion

of the Upādhi, more comprehensive than Mill's Joint Method :—

For the definition of an Upādhi, *vide* Śrīharsha and Udayana : **अथाप्रसाधनो यः साध्यसमव्याप्तिः उच्यते स उपाधिरिति** । Hence, to avoid an Upādhi (which is **साध्यसमव्याप्तिः**), the constant presence of anything relevant other than the sign and the signate in the positive instances (of agreement in presence, **अन्वय**), and the constant absence of any such thing in the negative instances (of agreement in absence, **व्यतिरेक**) must be safeguarded against. This amounts to Mill's Joint Method.

(f) Suspicion of non-perceptible Upādhi—Limits of legitimate doubt :—

न च अदृश्यमानोऽपि दर्शनानर्हतया साधकसाधकप्रमाणाभावेन संदिग्धमान उपाधिः स्वाभाविकत्वं प्रतिपद्यति इति साम्प्रतम् । अथर्वं शङ्कया भवितव्यं नियामकाभावादिति दशावकाशा खलु ईयम् प्रमाणमर्थोदात्तिक्रमेन शङ्का पिशाची लज्जप्रसरा न क्लृप्ति नालीति नेपं क्लृप्ति प्रपञ्चेत । सर्वत्रैव कस्यचित् कथयित् अनर्थस्य शङ्कास्पदत्वात् । अनर्थशङ्कायाश्च प्रेषावती निवृत्त्यङ्गत्वात् । अन्यथा सिग्धावपानोपयोगेषु अपि मरणादिदर्शनात् । तस्मात् प्रामाणिकलोकयात्राम् अनुयालयता यथादर्शनं शङ्कनीयम् । . . . तम्भादुपाधिं प्रपञ्चेन खनिष्यन्तोऽनुपलभमाना नालीति अवगम्य स्वाभाविकत्वं सम्बन्धस्य निश्चिनुमः ।—

(g) Tarka, Ūha : Deductive verification of particular inductions by applying the two fundamental inductions of Uniformity of Nature and Causality :—Doubt finally dispelled :—

Now innumerable particular uniformities of this kind (Vyāptis) are observed, and as a result of this repeated observation a belief in the Uniformity of Nature (**समावप्रतिबन्ध**), as well as in the principle of Causality (**कार्यकारणभाव**), is generated in the mind, a belief which has evidential value and validity. It is not

intuition (न मानसम्) but a mental pre-disposition based on uniform and uninterrupted experience (भूयोदर्शनमनित्त-संस्कारसहितम् इन्द्रियमेव स्वाभाविकसम्बन्धमिदं—यच्च भूयोदर्शनम् असाधारणम् इति प्रमाणात्तरं ज्ञातम्). Then, armed with these new resources, the belief in uniformity and in causality as general principles, we proceed to fortify our particular inductions (Vyāptis), whether of Uniformity of Nature or of Causality, by indirect deduction from these general principles:—We argue: If, under these observed circumstances, *A* were not the mark of *B*, the principle of Uniformity of Nature would be violated—Nature would not be uniform—or, if under these observed circumstances *A* were not the cause of *B*, the principle of Causality would be violated, the phenomenon *B* would be without a cause;—and such indirect proof (तर्क, ऊह) gives us the overwhelming probability which we call practical certitude, and on which every reasonable man (every thinking and judging person) proceeds to act in due natural course.—स्वभावतश्च प्रतिबद्धा हेतवः स्वसाध्येन, यदि साध्यमनगरेण भवेद्युः, स्वभावादेव प्रत्यवेरविति तर्कसहायः अनिरस्तसाध्यव्यतिरेकवृत्तिसंदिग्हा यच्च दुष्टाः, तच्च स्वसाध्यम् उपस्थापयन्त्येव।—Vāchaspati, I., 1, Sūtra 5; cf. also I., 1, Sūtra 40: ऊहः कारणस्योपपत्त्या संभवेन ज्ञायते । कारणसम्भवे कार्यस्य असंज्ञात् ।

Instances of Vyāpti (uniformity) not comprehended under Causality, or the relation of genus and species:—The Nyāya points out that the relations of cause and effect and of genus and species do not exhaust the grounds of Inference. There are cases of Inference based on Vyāpti (i.e. on invariable and unconditional concomitance) which come neither under Causality (तदुत्पत्ति) nor under Identity of Essence (तादात्म्य).

Vāchaspati notes that to-day's sunrise and yesterday's sunrise, the rise of the moon and the tide in the ocean, the relative positions of the stellar constellations, are instances of Vyāpti (invariable concomitance) between phenomena which are neither related as cause and effect nor as genus and species. Jayanta adds the conjunction of sunset with the appearance of the stars; of ants moving in procession (with their eggs) with the approach of the rains; of the rising of the constellation Agastya (Canopus) above the horizon with the drying-up of rivers; of the spring-tide with the full moon; and dismisses as sophistical and far-fetched the Buddhist attempt to explain all these cases by means of causality. We have seen that the Nyāya and the Mimāṃsā reduce most of these conjunctions to cases of co-effects of the same cause, co-effects which may be either simultaneous or successive.

अपि च अद्यतनस्य सवितुरुदयस्य ब्रह्मणेन सवितुरुदयेन, चन्द्रोदयस्य च समानकालेन समुद्रवृद्धा . . . न कार्यकारणभावः तादात्म्यं वा । अप्यत्र दृष्टे-
गम्यगमकभावः ।—Vāchaspati, Tātparyyatikā, I, 1, Sūtra 5 ;
cf. also Jayanta, Nyāyamañjari : अन्येषामपि हेतूनां भूत्वा जगति
दर्शनात् । सूर्यास्तमयमालोक्य कल्प्यते तारकोदयः । पूर्णचन्द्रोदयाद्बुधिरम्बुधेर-
वगम्यते । उदितेनानुमोषन्ते सरितः कुम्भयोगिनः । शुष्यत्पुलिनपथ्येन-
विश्रान्तसर्पकपः । पिपीलिकाशयस्यारचेष्टानुमितवृष्टयः । भवन्ति पथिकाः
पथकुटीरकरलोचिताः ।

Vyāpti between Cause and Effect—Relation of Causality to Vyāpti :—

On the Buddhist (and early Nyāya) view that one specific assemblage of "effect" phenomena has one specific assemblage of causal conditions, there would be two aggregates—the sum of causal conditions (कारणनामदी)

and the sum of effects (कार्यसामग्र्यो). For example, fire requires green-wood to complete the sum of causal conditions to give rise to smoke with some particular marks (धुमविशेष—बहुलपाकुतादिधूमं विशिष्ट, Jayanta, II; compare Gaṅgeśa, कृष्णागुरुप्रभववह्निमानयं कटुकासुरभिपासुरधूमवत्त्वात् । —Chintāmaṇi, Anumana, Viruddha-Siddhānta). Here, between an effect and a single condition (termed a cause) there is a relation of Vyāpti. The effect is Vyāpya or Gamaka (the sign or mark); the cause (or condition) is Vyāpaka or Gamya (the thing signified). In other words, the presence of the effect indicates the presence of the causal condition, and the absence of the causal condition will by implication indicate the absence of the effect. Smoke of this particular kind is supposed to be an effect of which there is one and only one assemblage of causal conditions (fire and green-wood); hence, where there is smoke there is fire, and when there is no fire there is no smoke.

Now introduce the complication of the plurality of causes :—Fire, for example, is the effect of several assemblages, *e.g.* (1) blowing on heated grass; (2) focussing rays through a lens on a combustible like paper or straw; (3) friction with the fire-drill, etc. Here each assemblage is regarded as a sum of causes. But in this case there is no Vyāpti between the effect “fire” and any particular assemblage of causal conditions, say of the lens or the fire-drill; for the presence of fire does not indicate the presence of the lens or the fire-drill assemblage, nor does the absence of either of the latter in particular indicate the absence of fire. Indeed, in such a case the effect “fire” is not a mark or sign.

(Gamaka or Vyápya) of any one in particular of the different possible causal assemblages, though each of these particular assemblages of causal conditions is a mark or sign (Gamaka or Vyápya) of fire.

The plurality of causes requires a further consideration in the light of the definition of the causal relation. A cause is defined to be the unconditional invariable antecedent. From the unconditionality it follows that the entire sum of conditions, and not one single condition, is, properly speaking, the cause. In view of the plurality of causes, an invariable antecedent must be taken to mean that any particular cause (*i.e.* assemblage of causal conditions) is invariably followed by the effect—not that the effect is invariably preceded by any particular cause.

Popularly, a single condition, say the lens or the fire-drill, is said to be a cause of fire; but, in view of the plurality of causes, this is apt to be misleading, as there is no Vyápti in this case; the lens or the fire-drill is no more a mark of fire than fire is a mark of the lens or the fire-drill.

The plurality of causes strains the definition of a cause, and undermines the relation of Vyápti between an effect and a cause. Any particular cause (causal aggregate) still indicates the effect, but not *vice versa*. The earlier Nyáya (down to Váchaspati and Jayanta) obviated the plurality, as we have seen, by introducing distinctive marks in the effect such as would indicate a single specific cause (कार्यवैलक्षण्य or कार्यभेद indicating कारणवैलक्षण्य or कारणभेद). Some, indeed, went farther and held that when the antecedent causal assemblages

differ in kind, the effect-phenomena, though apparently the same, do really differ specifically (or in kind)—कारणवैनाश्यात् कार्यवैनाशम् । But the Nyāya discards this hypothesis; the fire is the same, though the possible causes (or causal aggregates) differ, *e.g.* the lens, the drill, etc. But the effect-phenomenon to which we attend is not the only effect; in the case of plurality of causes we must carefully examine the accompaniments of the effect, *i.e.* the sum of effects, and the examination will show some distinctive or specific circumstance or accompaniment which will enable us to definitely determine the particular assemblage of causal conditions that must have preceded in the case under examination. This is the device of the earlier Nyāya as well as of the Buddhists, as we have seen; but the later Nyāya doubts the practicability as well as the theoretical validity of such a step on an unrestricted assumption of the plurality of causes, and feels troubled by the circumstance that no effect for which more than one cause (or causal aggregate) can be assigned, can be regarded as a mark or sign (Gamaka or Vyāpya) of any one of the causes in particular. Accordingly, some adherents of the later Nyāya advanced the proposition that when more than one causal aggregate can be supposed for any effect, the latter is a mark or sign (Gamaka or Vyāpya) not of any one of the causal aggregates in particular, but of one or other of them; and the absence not of one such cause, but of each and every one of them, alone indicates the absence of the effect. A cause therefore should be defined to mean *one or other* of the possible alternative aggregates

which, being given, the effect follows invariably and unconditionally. If we ask what is the defining mark (or quiddity) of the cause (कारणतावच्छेदक), we are told that it is *one-or-otherness* (अन्यतमत्व), and nothing else; others cut the Gordian knot by assuming that the different possible causes of the same effect possess a common power or efficiency (अतिरिक्तशक्ति), or a common "form" (जातिमीक्य), which accounts for the production of a common effect. The latter is therefore a sign or mark of this power (शक्ति) or this form (जातिमीक्य), which is manifested by each of the causal aggregates. This hypothesis (कल्पना), they hold, is simpler and more plausible than the hypothesis of specific differences latent in the apparently identical effect of a plurality of causes (कारणवैजात्यात् कार्यवैजात्यम्).

Cf. Dinakari on the Siddhānta-Muktavali: केचित्तु बहिर् प्रति तृणफुत्कारसंयोगादीनां तृणफुत्कारसंयोगत्वादिरूपेण कारणतया व्यभिचारेण असम्भवात् अतिरिक्तशक्तिसिद्धिः । न च तृणफुत्कारयोः अरशिनिर्मेयोः मणितरलिकिरणयोश्च सम्बन्धस्य अन्यतावच्छेदकं बहिर्बृत्तिवैजात्यत्रयं कल्पमिति न व्यभिचार इति वाच्यम् । तच्चन्यतावच्छेदकवैजात्यत्रयमकल्पनामपेक्ष्य तत्तत्सम्बन्धानां एकशक्तिमत्त्वेन कारणत्वकल्पनाया एव लघुत्वेन न्याय्यत्वात् इत्याहुः । तत्र । . . . अन्यतमत्वेन कारणतासम्भवात् . . . परे तु तृणादिसम्बन्धकालीनवायुसंयोगादीनां एकशक्तिमत्त्वेन हेतुतामादाय विनिगमनाविरहात् न शक्तिसिद्धिः इत्याहुः । Śloka 2; *cf.* also, तृणारशिमसम्बन्धतमत्वं कारणस्य विनिगमकम् ।

Cf. Udayana, Kusumāñjali, Stavaka 1: कथं तर्हि तृणारशिमशिम्यो भवसाशुमुखिरेकजातीयः । एकशक्तिमत्त्वात् इति चेत् न । यदि हि विजातीयेषु अपि एकजातीयकार्यकारण-शक्तिः समवेयात्, न कार्य्यात् कारणविशेषे छिन्ति अनुमीयेत । कारणव्यापृत्त्या च न तज्जातीयस्यैव कार्य्यस्य व्यावृत्तिरवसीयेत । . . . एतेन सूक्ष्मजातीयमिति निरसम् । अवहेरपि तद्वसीक्यता धूमोदपस्यापत्तेः ।

The scientific Methods already noticed—the Joint Method of Difference (the Pañchakārāṇī) and the Joint Method of Agreement (Vpāptigraha with Upādhisaṅkā-nirasa and Tarka)—are not the only methods of ascertaining causality or concomitance, or establishing a theory (सिद्धान्त); nor are these Methods always practicable. Very often we reach the explanation of a fact (उपपत्ति) by means of a hypothesis (कल्पना) properly tested and verified (निर्णीत). A legitimate hypothesis must satisfy the following conditions:—(1) the hypothesis must explain the facts (दृढसिद्धि or उपपत्ति); (2) the hypothesis must not be in conflict with any observed facts or established generalisations (दृढसिद्धये हि अदृष्टं कल्प्यते, न दृष्टविधात्ताय—Jayanta, Nyāya-mañjarī, Āhnika 1); (3) no unobserved agent must be assumed where it is possible to explain the facts satisfactorily by observed agencies (यदि अदृष्टमन्तरेण दृष्टं न सिद्ध्यति काममदृष्टं कल्प्यताम्, अन्यथापि तदुपपत्तौ किं तदुपकल्पनेन *ibid.*); (4) when two rival hypotheses are in the field, a crucial fact or test (विनिगमक, *ratio sufficiens*) is necessary; the absence of such a test (विनिगमनाविरह) is fatal to the establishment of either; (5) of two rival hypotheses, the simpler, *i.e.* that which assumes less, is to be preferred, *ceteris paribus* (कल्पनालाघव *versus* कल्पनागौरव); (6) of two rival hypotheses, that which is immediate or relevant to the subject-matter is to be preferred to that which is alien or remote (प्रथमोपस्थितत्व); (7) a hypothesis that satisfies the above conditions must be capable of verification (निर्णय) before it can be established as a theory (सिद्धान्त). The process of verification of a hypothesis consists in showing that

it can be deduced as a corollary from (or is involved by implication in) some more general proposition which is already well established (*cf.* Vatsyayana's exposition and illustration of Verification, निर्णय—including both the Deductive Method and Colligation).

This doctrine of Scientific Method, in Hindu Logic, is only a subsidiary discipline, being comprehended under the wider conception of Methodology, which aims at the ascertainment of Truth, whether scientific (Vijñāna) or philosophical (Jñāna) (मोक्षे श्रीज्ञानम् स्यात् विज्ञानं शिष्याश्रमयोः, Amara-Kosha); the latter being the ulterior aim. In the investigation of any subject, Hindu Methodology adopts the following procedure: (1) the proposition (or enumeration) of the subject-matter (Uddesa), (2) the ascertainment of the essential characters or marks, by Perception, Inference, the Inductive Methods, etc.—resulting in definitions (by लक्षण) or descriptions (by उपलक्षण); and (3) examination and verification (परीक्षा and निर्णय). Ordinarily the first step, Uddesa, is held to include not mere Enumeration of topics, but Classification or Division proper (विभागः उद्देशरूपानपावानु उद्देशः स्वामी । सामान्यसंज्ञया कोर्तेननुद्देशः प्रकारभेदसंज्ञया कोर्तेन विभाग इति—Jayanta, Mañjari); but a few recognise the latter as a separate procedure coming after Definition or Description. Any truth established by this three-fold (or four-fold) procedure is called a Siddhānta (an established theory). Now the various Pramānas, Proofs, i.e. sources of valid knowledge, in Hindu Logic, viz. Perception, Inference, Testimony, Mathematical Reasoning (सम्भव, including Probability in one view), are only operations subsidiary to the

ascertainment of Truth (तत्त्वनिर्णय). And the Scientific Methods are merely ancillary to these Pramānas themselves.

I have explained the principles of the Hindu doctrine of Scientific Method, avoiding the technicalities of Logic as far as possible; and I cannot here enter upon the logical terminology or the logical apparatus and machinery, which would require a separate volume to themselves. For these I would refer the reader to my Paper on Hindu Logic as also for an account of the later Nyāya (न्यायशास्त्र), which, in spite of its arid dialectics, possesses a three-fold significance in the history of thought: (1) logical, in its conceptions of Avachchhedaka and Pratiyogi, being an attempt to introduce quantification on a connotative basis, in other words, to introduce quantitative notions of Universal and Particular, in both an affirmative and a negative aspect, into the Hindu theory of Inference and Proposition regarded connotatively as the establishment of relations among attributes or marks; (2) scientific, in its investigation of the varieties of Vyāpti and Upādhi (and of अनवधारित), being an elaboration of Scientific Method, in the attempt to eliminate the irrelevant; and (3) ontological and epistemological, in its classification and precise determinations of the various relations of Knowledge and Being, with even greater rigidity and minuteness than in Hegel's Logic of Being and Essence. I will conclude with a few observations on Applied Logic, i.e. the logic of the special sciences, which is such a characteristic feature of Hindu scientific investigation. What is characteristic

of the Hindu scientific mind is that, without being content with the general concepts of Science and a general Methodology, it elaborated the fundamental categories and concepts of such of the special sciences as it cultivated with assiduity, and systematically adapted the general principles of Scientific Method to the requirements of the subject-matter in each case. The most signal example of applied logic (or Scientific Method) worked out with systematic carefulness is the Logic of Therapeutics in Charaka, a Logic which adapts the general concepts of cause, effect, energy, operation, etc., and the general methodology of science, to the special problems presented in the study of diseases, their causes, symptoms, and remedies (*vide* Charaka, *Vimānasthāna*, Chap. IV.; also *Sutrasthāna*; *vide* my Paper on Hindu Logic). Here I will give an illustration of Applied Methodology from the science of Analytical and Descriptive Grammar. Patañjali, in the *Mahābhāṣya* (*circa* 150 B.C.), is very careful as regards Methodology. I take no note now of the philosophical presuppositions of his philology (*vide* my Paper on the Hindu Science of Language), but will confine myself to his presentation of the Applied Logic of Descriptive and Analytical Grammar. The sentence is the unit of speech, as every Hindu philologist contends, but the first business of Analytical Grammar is to analyse the sentence into its significant parts and their coherent relations to one another. Assuming that articulate sounds are significant, the question is: how is the sentence, which is the unit of articulate speech, broken up into significant words and their mutual

relations? Patañjali answers that this is done by an instinctive use (*cf.* Vāchaspati's भूयोदर्शनजनितसंस्कारम् इन्द्रियम्) of the Joint Method of Difference (combined Addition and Subtraction), fortified by the Joint Method of Agreement (अनवयव्यतिरेको). Patañjali starts with a simple case. Take the two sentence-units: Pathati (he reads) and Pachati (he cooks). Suppose you start with the assumption that these sounds are significant, and that *separate elements have separate meanings*. Then you hear Pathati, and, at the same time, a man reading is pointed at. Then the assemblage of sounds Pathati (*i.e.* Path+ati) stands for the assemblage "one reads" (*i.e.* the action reading+an individual agent). Similarly, by finger-pointing or other indication, you find that the assemblage Pachati (*i.e.* Pach+ati) stands for the assemblage "one cooks" (*i.e.* the action cooking+an individual agent, say the same agent as before).

Now look at the groupings:—

Path+ati=reading+one agent.

Pach+ati=cooking+one agent.

From repeated observation of similar groupings, one is led to conclude that Path is the invariable concomitant of the action "reading," because the disappearance of the former (the other element remaining) leads to the disappearance of the latter (a rough Method of Difference by subtraction—होयते); that Pach is the invariable concomitant of the action "cooking," because the introduction of Pach (with nothing else added) leads to the introduction of the action "cooking" (a rough Method of Difference by addition—उपजायते); and

that *Ati*, which is the only "common antecedent" (अन्वयो), is the invariable concomitant of "one agent," which is the only common "consequent" (अन्वयो). In fact, the last should come first by the Method of Agreement, then the other two, either by Residue or by Joint Agreement in presence and absence (अन्वयव्यतिरेकी). So far all is plain sailing, though only very simple and very rough applications of the Methods are given. But—and this is the point—throughout the argument it is assumed that one sound is the concomitant of one idea; in other words, there is no plurality of causes to vitiate the application of the Method of Agreement in the above example. And now the objection is advanced that this basal assumption is untrue. The same sound is not the concomitant of the same idea; different words (sounds) may have the same meaning, and the same word (sound) may have different meanings. We cannot therefore by the Joint Method of Agreement (अन्वयव्यतिरेकी) determine the meanings of words or the separate functions of roots (stems) and inflections—at least, not so simply as is pretended above. Patañjali states this difficulty in the way of applying the Scientific Methods to the problems presented by Analytical Grammar, a difficulty arising from the plurality of causes, but does not state the solution. The solution, however, depends on the Method of Subtraction and Addition (Patañjali's ह्योक्ते and उपजायते); for it will be found by extensive observation that the number of meanings of which a word (sound) may be capable is limited. So also is the number of words (sounds) expressive of a given meaning. Hence, by

the Method of Difference, etc., the causal relations of words and meanings may be determined. Patañjali thus establishes the doctrine of Prakṛiti and Pratyaya (roots and inflections), with their separate significance, which is of course a necessary postulate in the case of an inflectional language like Sanskrit. Isolating and agglutinative languages offer less difficulty, whereas the difficulties are in some respects enhanced in the case of languages with a polysynthetic or incorporating (incapsulating) morphological structure.

अथ पुनर्ज्ञायते अयं प्रकृत्यर्थः अयं प्रत्ययार्थ इति । अन्वयव्यतिरेकाभ्याम् । कोऽसौ अन्वयो व्यतिरेको वा । इह पञ्चमीसुके कश्चित् शब्दः खूपते, पञ्चमीसुके कश्चित् शब्दो होयते (पच),—कश्चित् उपजायते (पठ,—कश्चित् अन्वयो (अति);—अथोऽपि कश्चित् होयते (चिकित्तिः),—कश्चित् उपजायते (पठिक्रिया),—कश्चित् अन्वयो (कर्तृत्वं चैकत्वंच) । तेन मन्यामहे यः शब्दो होयते, तस्य असौ अर्थः बोध्यो होयते । यः शब्द उपजायते तस्य असौ अर्थः बोध्य उपजायते । यः शब्दोऽन्वयो तस्य असौ अर्थः बोध्योऽन्वयो ।

विषय उपन्यासः—वहवी हि शब्दा एकार्थी भवन्ति । तदवस्था इन्द्रः शक्रः पुरन्दरः । एकश्च शब्दो बहुर्थः । तदवस्था यज्ञाः पादा माधा इति । अथ किं न साधीयोऽर्थवत्ता सिद्धा भवति । नापि द्रूमोऽर्थवत्ता न सिध्यतीति । वशीता हि अर्थवत्ता अन्वयव्यतिरेकाभ्यामेव । तत्र कुत एतदयं प्रकृत्यर्थः अयं प्रत्ययार्थ इति । (Mahābhāṣya, 1-3, 9.)

Patañjali not only applies the Scientific Methods to the foundations of Grammatical Analysis, but also *by their means* establishes and elaborates the fundamental categories and concepts of Grammatical (and Philological) Science, *e.g.* the concepts of action (क्रिया), agent (कर्त्ता), instrumental cause (करणं साधकतमम्), end (निमित्त), origin (हेतु), limit (अवधि), substance (द्रव्य), quality (गुण), and genus (जाति); also of the fundamental relations (at the bottom of all thought and *speech*)—the relations

of time (कालिकसम्बन्ध), of space (दिग्देशसम्बन्ध), of causality (कार्यकारणभाव), of inherence (समवाय), of co-inherence (सामानाधिकरत्य), of substance and attribute (विशेषणविशेष्यभाव), of the sign and the signate (संज्ञासंज्ञिभाव), of mutual dependence (इतरेतराश्रय)—an entire grammatical (and philological) apparatus, which will serve as a *point d'appui* for generations of philologists and grammarians to come.



LONDON:

PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED,

BECK STREET, STAMFORD STREET, S.E., AND GREAT WINDMILL STREET, W.



Sciences

India - Sciences, ancient

Ms. 221/175

Central Archaeological Library,
NEW DELHI. 27250

Call No. 509.34 / 82a

Author— B. Seal

Title— Positive sciences

"A book that is shut is but a block"

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY
GOVT. OF INDIA
Department of Archaeology
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book
clean and moving.